This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google

Fabroni Pinxt. R. Cooper Sculp.

"Total eclipse! no sun, nor moon;
All dark amidst the blaze of noon."

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS

THROUGH

RUSSIA, SIBERIA, POLAND, AUSTRIA, SAXONY, PRUSSIA, HANOVER,

&c. &c.

UNDERTAKEN

DURING THE YEARS 1822, 1823, AND 1824,

WHILE SUFFERING FROM TOTAL BLINDNESS,

AND COMPRISING

AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR BEING CONDUCTED A STATE PRISONER FROM THE EASTERN PARTS OF SIBERIA.

By JAMES HOLMAN, R.N. & K.W.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

"The man who is the lord of the land spake roughly to us, and took us for spies of the country." GENESIS xlii. 30.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR GEO. B. WHITTAKER, AVE-MARIA LANE.

1825.

Digitized by Google

DK25
H6
v.1

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google

Dedication.

TO THE

KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

SIRE,

I BEG leave humbly to approach your Most Gracious Majesty, to express the high sense of gratitude I entertain for the honour of being permitted to dedicate the present work to your Majesty.

I have, since my affliction, been indebted to your Majesty's benevolence for most essential benefits, and now, with that condescension which so peculiarly adorns your Majesty, you deign to gild the produce of my humble toil with your exalted patronage, and thus confer upon me a distinction most gratifying to my feelings and ambition.

Digitized by Google

My powers of personal exertion have been too much curtailed, to allow me to offer your Majesty in return, more than a heart replete with loyalty and gratitude, otherwise I would be proud in devoting the remainder of my existence to prove the ardour of my zeal and attachment.

With the sincerest aspirations to heaven, that your Majesty may long continue to rule over that free and enlightened nation, which, under your paternal government, has risen to a transcendant height of glory,

I have the honour to subscribe myself,

YOUR MAJESTY'S

Most dutiful, obedient, and

Devoted Servant,

JAMES HOLMAN.

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

WERE any individual, gifted with the full and ordinary powers that it has pleased the Creator to confer upon the human race, to undertake a journey into a strange and almost unknown country, there could be no reason why he should not collect, and communicate, a fund of curious and interesting particulars relative to the scene of his travel, its inhabitants, and productions; but that one circumstanced like the Author of the present work, under a total deprivation of that most important of the senses for acquiring a knowledge of external objects—the power of vision, should, in the first place, meditate and attempt such a journey; and, secondly, venture to obtrude its results upon the public, must be deemed

Digitized by Google

a solecism, both in the history of travel and literature.

Impressed by the above considerations, the Author feels it incumbent upon him to explain, as a prefatory subject, the motives which led him to such "deeds of daring enterprise"—to traverse, sightless, and almost alone, the dreary wilds of a barbarous country, wider in extent than Europe itself; and also to declare the channels and opportunities through which he has been enabled to derive that information he is now desirous to impart to the public.

Deprived, by the will of the Almighty, of all intercourse with the visible world, the desire of locomotion has to him become a new sense,—a compensating principle, which, by the succession of objects it presents, serves to fill up the deficiencies of which he would otherwise be sensible, from the loss of the visual organ. It may not be easy to explain, with correctness, the nature of the sensations which are thus communicated; that numberless and interesting associations are called forth, may readily be conceived, and which, connecting

Digitized by Google

themselves with ideas previously acquired, relative to the countries, places, and objects with which he is really, or virtually, brought into contact, give rise to operations of the mind more or less pleasurable. This, however, is not all: the novelties which present themselves, dependent on the habits or customs of the people he may meet with; the accidents to which he becomes exposed, many of them rendered singularly peculiar by the peculiarity of his own circumstances; and the variety of general information he may be enabled to glean; to which may be added an almost romantic ardour to surmount difficulties; all conspire to throw an interest, sometimes nearly magical, over his wanderings.

The above observations may constitute something like an apology for what many will regard as an absurd or affected restlessness of mind; a feeling which he is not a little anxious to do away with, since his heart disclaims it; besides, he often finds it a material annoyance, having more than once been indebted to it for a mortifying opposition to his most anxious wishes.

Digitized by Google

That he should intrude upon the public the narrative of his journey and adventures, requires a farther explanation. With his great disadvantages, he has no right to presume that he could add much to what was previously known respecting the immense Russian Empire, or, with much authority, illustrate the manners, customs, or character of its inhabitants; the field, however, is a wide one, and one which has not frequently been trodden, so that numberless of its indigenous productions, both natural and moral, remain to be discovered. Whether the Author has succeeded in collecting,—to carry forward the metaphor,—any of its original plants, or of the latent seeds, or springing flowers of the recent civilization of this country, he leaves to the reader, after the perusal of his pages, to determine. He is, however, willing to admit, that in sending forth his narrative, he is not a little influenced by the wish to be regarded as a member, however humble, of the literary world, in which feeling he is, to a degree, encouraged by the favour-

Digitized by Google

able manner in which his former production was received by the public. Those who may be inclined to censure his presumption in this respect, he trusts will not deny some indulgence to his peculiar situation, or refuse to admit, however much the work itself may fail in interest, that the innocent gratification he has derived from its composition is some excuse for the publication.

Before closing his introductory remarks, the Author is particularly anxious to do away with any impression, which the public may be likely to entertain, with respect to the fidelity of his descriptions, and the opportunities which were afforded him of acquiring information during his journey.

A late interesting traveller, (Captain Cochrane,) whom the Author had the pleasure of meeting at Moscow, previous to setting out for Siberia, in commenting upon this intention of visiting that remote part of the Russian empire,* has thrown out insinuations injurious to

* See a Pedestrian Journey through Russia, &c. by Capt. J. D. Cochrane.

Digitized by Google

the authenticity of the present publication. After ridiculing the Author's scheme of travel, in a vein of combined pity and sarcasm, this gentleman proceeds to state, that "any information he (Mr. Holman) may receive can only proceed from exiles and criminals; and, consequently, is not implicitly to be relied on, particularly situated as he is, possessing hardly a sufficient knowledge of the Russian language to appreciate the value of such hearsay information." It might be easy to remark on the inconsistency of this passage; in which Captain C. accuses the Author of gaining his hearsay information from a people whose language he asserts him not able to comprehend. The Author hopes that he shall be able to disprove this insinuation, and which, he begs to remark, if it is to be received as designating the manner in which Captain C. procured *his own* information, must be considered as decidedly fatal to the veracity of that gentleman's late publication.

Physically blind as the Author is, he cannot but be sensible of the mental obscurity of

Digitized by Google

Captain C., and might, without impropriety, address him in the words of the Roman satirist,

"Cur tu lippus aliorum vitia tam cernis acutus."*

It is with feelings of honest pride and satisfaction, that the Author is enabled to assert, that the information detailed in this work, was collected, generally, under the most unexceptionable circumstances, and from the purest and most authentic sources. On entering Russia his introductions led him immediately into the most respectable society, comprising many of the highest characters of St. Petersburg; from thence he passed forward through the country, from one individual point to another, until he reached the *ultima Thule* of his journey, with an uninterrupted chain of friendly intercourse with the most elevated and dignified persons of the empire, the highest officers of his imperial majesty's government not being excepted; during more than four months' residence at Irkoutsk he was received into the family of his excellency the governor-

* See Appendix A.

Digitized by Google

general of Eastern Siberia, the virtuous and patriotic Alexander Lavinski, with a confidence and kindness which rather indicated the affectionate regard of a brother, than the cold attentions that would be looked for by an unknown and accidental stranger.

It was from these unexceptionable channels, and not from the spurious, doubtful, and surcharged accounts of "criminals and exiles," that his subject matter has been derived; and after such an exposition, he confidently ventures to throw himself upon the candour of the public, to decide whether he has not triumphantly repelled the unjust and unmerited anticipations of Captain Cochrane.

One painful subject remains to be noticed—the abrupt and hasty manner in which the Author was conducted from out of Siberia, and the Russian empire, by the particular mandate of the imperial Alexander, a measure for which he is totally at a loss to assign any satisfactory reason, and which prevented him from completing the more arduous and interesting part of the arrangement for travel which he had sketched out for himself.

Digitized by Google

The reason advanced, of the Emperor's anxiety for the personal safety of the Author, is evidently more specious than real, since it is contradicted by the unnecessary harsh treatment, and strict surveillance which were extended over him during his conveyance as a state prisoner to the Austrian frontier. Had this motive really existed, it is reasonable to infer that he would have been left at St. Petersburg or Moscow, in the bosom of his friends, instead of being dragged out of the empire, and left on its borders, a still greater stranger than even in Siberia itself.

The Author feels it due to himself to state, that he is neither conscious that he could have given private personal offence to his imperial majesty, nor have excited the suspicion or jealousy of the government, by any of his proceedings or enquiries; in short, he neither felt himself prompted by his powers or inclination to interfere with, or animadvert upon, the government, even so far as to pass the slightest censure upon the many glaring faults which could not fail to be observable to the *eye* of a free-born Englishman.

Digitized by Google

To conclude, his chief motives, in undertaking this arduous journey, have been to interest himself with human nature, and by comparing it under its different circumstances, to glean a harvest of amusement and information.

> "——— The spacious west,
> And all the teeming regions of the south
> Hold not a quarry to the curious flight
> Of knowledge, half so tempting, or so fair,
> As man to man."

He begs to add, that if the facts he has accumulated shall be deemed deserving of the perusal and attention of his countrymen, or contribute to their gratification, his object in publishing them will have been fully accomplished.

Windsor, April 23, 1825.

Digitized by Google

TRAVELS,

&c. &c.

CHAPTER I.

The Author embarks for St. Petersburg—Motives and apology for undertaking so arduous a journey under his peculiar affliction—Detention off Gravesend—The mouth of the Thames—Sea-sickness, and mode of relieving it—Jutland—The Swedish coast—Cronberg Castle and Elsinore—Hamlet's palace—Copenhagen, Drago, Bornholm, and Gothland—A human monster—Gulf of Finland—The harbour of Cronstadt—Adventures with guard-ship—Meanness of the custom-house officers—Short stay in Cronstadt—Arrival at St. Petersburg.

On the 19th of July, 1822, I embarked in the Saunders-Hill, schooner, commanded by Captain Courtney, then lying in the London Docks, and bound for St. Petersburg, with the ostensible motive of visiting the Russian empire; but the real one, should circumstances

Digitized by Google

prove propitious, of making a circuit of the whole world: an intention, however, which, as will be seen in the sequel, was frustrated by causes over which I had no controul. My motives for concealing so important a part of these views, it will not be difficult to explain: they are attributable to the opposition my kind friends have always been inclined to make against what, under my peculiar deprivation, they are disposed to regard as Quixotic feelings; a feeling on their parts which I am desirous to suppress, since, on various occasions, I have to charge it with the disappointment of my most anxious wishes. Alas! how little are they able to appreciate my true sentiments and powers, as developing themselves in an intense desire to occupy the mind, to acquire solid information, and triumph over those difficulties which others might deem insurmountable! That my views are not chimerical, may be inferred from the success which, as far as my innate powers are concerned, has hitherto attended my exertions. Where the mind is properly constituted, the diminution of one faculty naturally calls others

Digitized by Google

into more extensive action. In my case, the deprivation of sight has been succeeded by an increased desire for locomotion; nor, little as the world may imagine me adapted for its indulgence, am I conscious of having ever over-rated my abilities in that particular: in short, there are few obstacles which man's perseverance may not enable him to overcome, if he will but rightly exercise those faculties with which the beneficence of his Creator has endowed him.

> "Call now to mind what high capacious powers
> Lie folded up in man; how far beyond
> The praise of mortals, may the eternal growth
> Of nature to perfection half divine
> Expand the blooming soul!" AKENSIDE.

After a delay of many hours, occasioned by the captain not being on board, and other causes, our vessel dropped down to Gravesend, where, however, we did not arrive until seven o'clock on the following evening, and were then detained until late in the succeeding day. Soon after leaving this place, the wind being adverse, at five o'clock we anchored in the Lower Hope. Here, about midnight, an acci-

Digitized by Google

dent occurred, which proved the cause of a mortifying detention. A large and clumsy collier contrived to run foul of us; and this accompanied by so great a shock, as not only to induce us to think our vessel split in two, but actually to snap the cable, loosen the scroll, or figure-head, and carry away some of our rigging; we soon, however, disengaged ourselves, and got down another anchor. As this accident was occasioned by the carelessness of the other party, who were coming up the river with a fair wind, our captain determined to compel them to compensate the damage he had received; to effect which, and repair our injuries, we were obliged to return to Gravesend; which was the more mortifying, as the wind soon after became favourable for our progress down the river.

During the confusion which attended this accident, I was happy in being able to make myself useful by taking the helm, and complying promptly with the captain's 'starboard' and 'port.' The best of it was, that he was ignorant of having a blind helmsman, until the fray was over, when, observing some one

Digitized by Google

en chemise blanche, (for I had turned out of my birth in this state at the moment of alarm,) he at first mistook me for his wife. He was, however, so well satisfied with my nautical skill, as afterward to permit me to steer the vessel in a fresh breeze.

On the 24th, having repaired damages, we once more quitted Gravesend, and, the wind being fair and the tide in our favour, we soon cleared the mouth of the river. Our rapid progress towards the ocean led me into a train of reflections; during which the lines of Denham, addressed to the Thames, occurred to me, and particularly the couplet in which he describes it as

> "Hastening to pay its tribute to the sea,
> Like mortal life to meet eternity."

My meditations, however, were interrupted by what had nearly proved a fatal illustration of this allegory, and of the uncertainty of human life. One of our sailors, having carelessly taken hold of a loose rope, fell overboard from the fore-yard arm; being, however, a good swimmer, he was picked up without injury.

Digitized by Google

My only companions in the cabin were the captain, his wife, and child, a little girl of about two years of age, whose fretful temper proved no slight annoyance to her parents and myself. Soon after getting out to sea, the lady began to suffer from sickness; the child, however, continued well and troublesome during the voyage.

Although I have never myself experienced the distressing sensation of sea-sickness, I have witnessed so much of its effects as to fancy that I am not incapable of suggesting a variety of means for preventing or relieving it; these I am induced to detail, hoping they may prove useful to some suffering voyager. As I believe the affection is generally accompanied by an undue biliary secretion, it appears desirable, for some days before embarking, to put the digestive organs into the best possible state of health. With this view, the diet and other regimen should be plain and unirritating, every thing being avoided which has a tendency to give rise to acidity on the stomach; at the same time a gentle dose or two of calomel may be taken, to clear out the biliary

Digitized by Google

passages. The best private stock of provision will comprise plain, unsweetened biscuit, the lean of ham, hung beef, and a little good brandy; but tongues, butter, honey, and sweetmeats, should be avoided. On first going on board, the individual should keep quiet, and on no account, however well he may feel, indulge himself in walking on deck, viewing the surrounding objects, or the rigging of the vessel, until he has become habituated to the motions of the latter. He should, as much as possible, divert his mind from noticing the motions of the vessel, by occupying it with some amusing or interesting subject. The first meal ought to be particularly sparing, both as to quality and quantity. If it be breakfast, let it consist of a single cup of coffee or tea, with a small quantity of sugar only, and no milk, accompanied by a piece of biscuit or dry bread. If hunger becomes urgent between breakfast and dinner, relieve it with a portion of biscuit; and if thirst is troublesome, allay it with a little weak brandy and water, or a glass of soda-water. At dinner, the most proper food will be a little plain

Digitized by Google

boiled or roasted meat, without fat or gravy, with a boiled potatoe, or bread; such vegetables as contain much saccharine principle, and particularly greens, being abstained from; and as a beverage, weak brandy and water, or soda-water, may be taken. If wine be desired, Madeira, or Teneriffe, is preferable to other kinds. In the evening, the tea or coffee, as in the morning, may be repeated; and when disposed to retire to rest, let care be taken to have as much free air as possible, the confined air of the vessel being one of the most powerful exciting causes of the indisposition. If, notwithstanding, symptoms of sickness come on, I would recommend, on the first approach of giddiness, to assume a horizontal position on deck, if possible, for the advantage of the refreshing air, and to take occasionally, particularly after each effort of vomiting, a little soda-water. By attending to the above directions, the attack may, throughout the voyage, either be prevented, or, at least, materially alleviated.

For the succeeding three days our progress was favourable, but on the 29th a squall car-

Digitized by Google

ried away the fore-top gallant-mast; we soon however got the wreck cleared, and another substituted, and in the evening of this day the coast of Jutland began to make its appearance; on the following day we came in sight of the Swedish coast, passed the Castle of Marstrand, and in sight of the wings beacon at the entrance of Gothenberg, and by evening arrived at the entrance of the Categate. On the 1st of July we made the Island of Zealand, and passed the Castle of Cronberg, built by Christian the Fourth, where the unfortunate Matilda, Queen of Denmark, and sister to our late king, was detained a prisoner. In the evening we anchored in Elsinore roads. On Tuesday, July 2nd, we landed at Elsinore, and breakfasted with our hospitable consul Mr. Fenwick. The wind being fair, Captain Courtney, anxious to get forward, as soon as his necessary business with the port was transacted, to enable him to pass the sound, hurried me away, so that I had no time to visit the interesting objects of the place, some of which would have afforded me considerable satisfaction, particularly the Castle of Cron-

Digitized by Google

berg, and the palace and gardens where Hamlet's father is reported to have been murdered and buried. This palace is said to be a large square stone building, standing on the foot of a hill, which gradually rises beyond it, and which is ascended by serpentine walks planted with trees, whose ample foliage affords an agreeable shelter from the scorching heat of the noon-tide sun, and leads to the famed spot immortalized by Shakspeare, in the following passage, as the scene of poor Ophelia's fate.

"There is a willow grows ascaunt the brook,
That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream;
Therewith fantastic garlands did she make
Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long purples,
That liberal shepherds give a grosser name,
But our cold maids do dead men's fingers call them:
There on the pendent boughs her coronet weeds
Clambering to hang, an envious sliver broke;
When down her weedy trophies, and herself,
Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread wide;
And, mermaid-like, a while they bore her up:
Which time, she chaunted snatches of old tunes;
As one incapable of her own distress,
Or like a creature native and indu'd
Unto that element: but long it could not be,
Till that her garments, heavy with their drink
Pull'd the poor wretch from her melodious lay
To muddy death." HAMLET.

Digitized by Google

Independent of the poetical interest it excites, the spot itself is highly picturesque and romantic.

The houses of Elsinore are generally large, lofty, and well built, and at the same time exceedingly neat and clean; the streets are however narrow, ill paved, and without footways, while the windows of the basement story project so much into the street, that the pedestrian is in constant danger of being driven over by the carriages.

At one o'clock in the afternoon we again got under weigh; at two, past Tycho Brach's Island, the wind being light and variable; and at half after ten in the evening anchored off the Crown Battery at Copenhagen. I anxiously wished for an adverse wind to prevent our sailing, so as to allow me time to visit the city of Copenhagen; but after a stormy and rainy morning, the weather became so fair about noon, that we left our anchorage and proceeded on the voyage. After coasting all day along the Islands of Zealand and Drago, in the evening we entered the Baltic Sea, steering straight for the Island of Born-

Digitized by Google

holm, which we made early the next day, and from whence we were visited by a boat laden with poultry, eggs, and milk. On the following morning we saw the Island of Gothland, where General Norby retired with the Danish fleet from Calmar, on receiving accounts of a general insurrection in Denmark; the consequence of which movement was the siege and capture of that city by Gustavus Vasa. During the two next days we had boisterous weather and rough seas, but on the following day, July 7th, the weather proved very fine, and at ten in the morning we found ourselves off the Light-house on the Island of Dagho, which lies at the entrance of the Gulf of Riga. There is a passage on each side for shipping, but the western one is the deepest and largest. Some years back the proprietor of this island, Baron ——, built a house on an elevated situation, crowning it with an octagonal tower, in which large mirrors of plate glass were disposed to reflect the light so as to resemble the light-house; this room he occasionally caused to be illuminated, while the proper light-house was kept in

Digitized by Google

darkness; deluded by the artifice, many vessels were wrecked on the coast, with the loss of numbers of their crews; the cargoes were then seized by this monster, and appropriated to the gratification of his infamous cupidity. At length the captain of a vessel, who had been a sufferer in consequence, ventured to wait upon the baron, intending to upbraid him with his treachery: it happened that a person who had officiated in the family as a tutor, had experienced a fit, and was supposed to have died, so that his corpse had been laid out in one of the apartments of the castle. Into this room, the baron conducted his victim, and there dreading a disclosure of his villanies, murdered him with an axe. At this juncture the supposed corpse recovered its sensibility, and witnessed the cruel scene, but had the prudence to continue motionless until the inhuman monster had left the apartment, when he availed himself of the opportunity to escape to Riga, and gave that information which terminated in the wretch's perpetual banishment amid the savage wilds of Siberia; there a prey to conscience and remorse, he dragged out the misera-

Digitized by Google

ble remnant of an existence, already too near its close to allow time to expiate a life of such dreadful depravity.

We now entered the Gulf of Finland, and commenced an intricate and dangerous navigation, which, however, is facilitated by different coloured flags placed on the various shoals, and a number of light-houses, for which the Russian government do not exact any dues. Towards midnight we had much thunder and lightning, followed by a heavy squall of rain. At three in the afternoon of the 10th of July, we approached the guard-ship off the harbour of Cronstadt, who fired a shot to compel us to come to an anchor in these roads, which, as it was a strong gale, the captain would gladly have avoided, for he even apprehended this measure would have occasioned the loss of his vessel, and was desirous to run straight into harbour; he was obliged however to attempt a compliance, and the consequence was, that his cable broke and parted from the first anchor, while the vessel drifted so far with the second anchor, as to have been very nearly on shore; this result, however, would have been

Digitized by Google

a matter of perfect indifference to the commanding officer of the guard-ship; at length the weather became more moderate, and enabled us to lie secure.

Early on the following morning, the guard-boat visited us, with her crew in a state of evident intoxication, in consequence of their previous visits to other vessels, from each of which they invariably expect to be treated with liquors; a point of discipline widely different from what is observed in the British service. Our captain was unwilling to increase their exhilaration; but as soon as the officers descended into the cabin, they desired their crew might be furnished with brandy. The captain was then given to understand that he must pay for the shot that had been fired over him: this is said to be a perquisite of the captain of the guard-ship. I am, however, much mistaken, judging from the sound, if there was any shot really fired over us; be this as it may, it appears hard enough to be obliged to pay for the instrument of one's own punishment, like a boy at school, who is charged for the birch that tickles him.

Digitized by Google

A singular feature in the manners of these gentry is a system of begging any, or every, article which happens to take their fancy, and this in a way that neither expects, nor admits of, a denial; nay, such was their rapacity and meanness, that one even asked the captain to give him needles, thread and tape, for the use of his wife; and which, to keep him in good humour, were promised on the next voyage. I afterward heard many ludicrous instances of the extent to which they sometimes carry their begging system. A lady of my acquaintance came over when a child, and brought a doll for her amusement: one of the custom-house fellows took it into his head to long for this plaything, and, with rapturous admiration, made his petition accordingly; nor could the poor child's tears, nor the captain's entreaties, induce him to forego his covetous demand. At length the child's unwilling and faltering consent was gained, by a promise of bringing her a better one next voyage. Cold, indeed, must be the hearts of such men!

Of course this system is not sanctioned by

Digitized by Google

the government; it is only submitted to by the captains of foreign vessels to preserve the complacency, and prevent the ill-will and annoyance of these fellows in the arrangement of their port duties. On the contrary, an instance occurred not long since, where, on a threat of complaint to the government, the officer, in the most abject manner, returned the articles he had received, and entreated that the affair might not be noticed. In our instance, their cupidity received a material check, on finding that there was a British officer on board; and, as they have a wonderful respect for military rank, from that moment all begging ceased.

I trust that these unpleasant traits of Russian character will be softened down on a more intimate acquaintance. They could not, however, fail to excite an unfavourable impression at the very moment of entering the country; nor am I unaware of the injustice of drawing general inferences from the peculiar manners and customs of a sea-port. How incorrect would be the opinion of a foreigner with respect to our own country, were he to

Digitized by Google

take his estimates of its character from the impressions he might receive on his first landing at our sea-ports! He would necessarily fail to discover any of that genuine solidity and integrity of character peculiar to our country, which developes itself so gradually as almost to close the door against the admission of friendly intercourse with strangers; but which, once admitted, evinces more purity, and permanence, than attaches to any other people in the world.

We were now for some time detained by the necessary arrangements with the custom-house, during which I preferred remaining on board the vessel to entering the inns of Cronstadt, which, by report, are little better than ale-houses; and I was not permitted to proceed to St. Petersburg until my passport was regulated, and which could not be effected in less than twenty-four hours. On the following afternoon, however, I was induced to go on shore, by the receipt of a polite invitation from the Rev. Mr. B——, an English clergyman resident at this place, who had heard of me through the medium of the press,

Digitized by Google

Our captain and his lady accompanied me; and with them I visited a large shop, where we were presented with tumblers of tea, prepared with lemon-juice, as a substitute for cream, as is their custom during the time of a fast. After this, I had the pleasure of passing a most agreeable evening in the company of Mr. B—— and his sisters, where I could not avoid noticing a peculiarity in the tea, as if it had been made from aromatic herbs. It was of a fine quality, but scented with the flowers of a Chinese shrub, (the *olea fragrans;* named by the Chinese *quai-fa*,) a small quantity of which is placed at the top of each chest. The tea thus perfumed is then termed "flower-tea," and is in particular estimation among the Russians.

Mr. B—— was kind enough to take me to a Greek church during the time of service, and afterwards to a new chapel of his own, at present in an unfinished state, and which will be a most important accommodation to the numerous British seamen who enter this port. In the evening I returned on board.

On the following morning I again went on

Digitized by Google

shore, to call on our worthy consul, Mr. Booker, and was taken to examine his life-boat, which was made of wicker-work, covered with leather, with two skates under it, running the whole length of the boat; the advantage of which structure is, to enable it to be used in crossing the Gulf of Finland, either in the water or on the ice, as circumstances may require. Mr. Booker, whose house is the very temple of hospitality, kindly invited me to pass the remainder of the day with him; but as my passport was now ready, I was desirous of proceeding immediately to St. Petersburg.

At five o'clock I took my passage in the steam-boat to St. Petersburg, distant from Cronstadt about fifteen miles, or twenty-two Russian versts, for which I paid five roubles.* I was not, however, allowed to take my luggage, unless I would consent to pay a cus-

* The Russian rouble corresponds with the French franc, being (according to the present rate of exchange) equal to ten-pence of English money. For a particular account of the moneys, weights, and measures of this country, the reader is referred to Appendix B.

Digitized by Google

tom-house officer for accompanying it; and therefore contented myself with a sufficiency for immediate purposes, leaving the remainder to be forwarded to the custom-house at St. Petersburg with the vessel's cargo.

In this short voyage I had the advantage of being accompanied by one of Mr. B.'s clerks; who, on our arrival at the imperial city, about eight o'clock, kindly procured a droshka, and conducted me to the abode of my old and particular friend, Mr. C—l—b—k, the gentleman whom I have so frequently mentioned in my late Travels through France and Italy.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

Arrangements, &c. on arrival at St. Petersburg—Thunder storm—Russian mode of address—The Emperor—The Russian Navy—Sarskoe-Selo and Pavlosky palaces—Visit to English club—Birth of a Princess, and Emperor's names-day—Ceremonies—The ship Kitty—Mr. L. the projector—Disappointed speculations—Approach of winter, and closure of the year.

WHEN I arrived at St. Petersburg, our ambassador and consul, as well as the principal part of the English merchants, were enjoying their summer country residences, at a distance of from five to fifteen miles from the city, chiefly in the direction of the Peterhof road, which may be regarded as the court side of the town. The kind offices of my friend C——, and the many letters of introduction with which I was provided, soon, however, enabled me to avail myself of numerous invitations, so that it was not long before I found myself immersed in all the gaiety of this animated metropolis, and its neighbourhood.

Digitized by Google

One of my first concerns was to procure a servant, and I had the good fortune to meet with an intelligent Russian youth of eighteen, well acquainted with the French language, and consequently qualified to act as an interpreter in my various transactions with his countrymen.

For some days I was occupied with visiting my friends, and delivering my letters of introduction. On the second day I had the pleasure of accompanying Mr. C—— to the country residence of a gentleman six miles out of town on the Peterhof road; while here a most tremendous thunder storm came on, which killed a horse, and melted part of a metal inscription over the portico of the residence of our ambassador in this neighbourhood. These convulsions of nature, I soon learnt, are frequent in this country during the summer season.

In the course of this morning, my friend took the opportunity of enquiring the christened name of my father, in order that his servant might know how to address me with due respect. It is peculiar to this country, that no one thinks of addressing his superior

Digitized by Google

with a title correspondent to our Mr., but by an addition of his own to his father's christian name;—for instance, my father's name being John, I was called James the son of John; unless there be two of a name the surname is considered superfluous. A still more respectful manner of addressing elderly people is to call them "father" or "mother," while amongst the lower orders, they address all of nearly their own age as "brother" or "sister." On the 20th, I had the gratification of dining at our consul-general's, in company with some of the members of our embassy, as well as other distinguished persons, among whom was the celebrated general of engineers, Betancour. In a few days afterward I was also honoured with an invitation to the country residence of our ambassador, where I had the pleasure of meeting a large party, comprising among others, some of the foreign ministers, Sir R. K. Porter, and other brother travellers.

On the 1st of August, while driving on the Peterhof road, we had the gratification of being passed by the emperor in his caleche,

Digitized by Google

drawn by four horses abreast, and who was on his way to our ambassador's to stand sponsor for one of his children. His majesty was dressed in the uniform of his guards, green, with red cuffs and collar. The coachman was in the costume of his country, that is, he wore a long caftan tied round the waist by a red sash; a black velvet cap fastened close round his head, square at the top, and ornamented with a tassel on the centre; and on his hands, a large pair of military gloves that passed over the cuffs of the caftan. Only one feld-jager, in full uniform, followed the carriage.

This I am told is his majesty's usual style of travelling in the neighbourhood of the city; in the city itself, however, he drives only a pair, and sometimes a single horse. He is always remarkably condescending in his manner, returning every salute either with a bow, or by touching the corner of his hat; and he not unfrequently stops and enters into conversation with such persons as he is acquainted with. Several of my friends have had this honour.

Digitized by Google

In about a week after this time, his imperial majesty reviewed his fleet, which was lying at Cronstadt, and which is fitted out every summer for a three months' cruize in the Gulf of Finland, for it seldom ventures into the Baltic; so that this part of the Russian navy may fairly be termed "fresh-water sailors," as the water in this gulf is scarcely brackish, even at its upper part, near the Baltic;—it contains in short, so little saline principle, that I could with advantage use it with soap to wash with. Perhaps, I should not be carrying the accusation too far to term them also "fair-weather sailors;" since, on an indication of foul weather, they immediately make for port.

The constitution of the Russian navy is widely different from that of England, as their sailors are formed into regiments, and occupied for more than half the year as garrison soldiers. These regiments, termed equipages, rank with the guards; one, however, is more particularly called "the guard equipage," and employed in the personal service of the emperor. Three of these regi-

Digitized by Google

ments form a brigade, commanded by a rear-admiral; while each individual regiment is under the controul of a captain of the first rank, which is equal to that of a colonel in the army, with a proportionate number of subordinate officers, who are all educated as cadets for the service, and regularly exercised in nautical tactics, having a hull of a ship built on shore, which is masted and rigged for that purpose, as well as yachts, to enable them to acquire a practical knowledge of their profession, by cruizing in the Baltic.

Promotion in these corps goes by seniority, excepting that any distinguished service, or the pleasure of his imperial majesty, may authorize a deviation from the general rule. It may be questioned whether this system is favourable to the character of the Russian navy. On the one side, it may be urged, that the length of time required to reach the higher ranks, must afford every opportunity of gaining a due proficiency; while, on the other hand, the stimulus for exertion may be diminished, by the certainty of attaining promotion as a mere

Digitized by Google

matter of course. We have, however, an instance, in the super-eminent abilities and distinguished conduct of our artillery and marine corps, that this latter principle does not necessarily operate to produce such a result.

On the 11th, I accompanied some friends to visit the Sarskoe-Selo and Pavlosky palaces. We were, however, disappointed in seeing the interior of either of them, as a part of the imperial family were occupying them as summer residences. I purpose, however, to avail myself of a future opportunity of describing them. We were, notwithstanding this disappointment, much gratified with the beauty of the gardens, and returned highly delighted with our day's excursion.

On the 16th, the emperor quitted his capital for Warsaw, with the intention of proceeding from thence to the congress of Verona.

On the following day, I had the gratification of being introduced as a visitor to the English club, with respect to which excellent establishment I shall have many observations to make on a future occasion. After dinner, several of the members retired to the bowling-

Digitized by Google

green, where I was vain enough to attempt a participation in their amusement; and, what is more, to fancy that there was not any material difference to be found between those who could, and those who could *not* see.

Early on the morning of the 11th of September, the guns of the fortress burst forth tidings of joy; which, on inquiry, proved to be the annunciation of the birth of a princess, the fourth child of the Grand Duke Nicholas. The day was, however, a propitious one for other reasons, being no less than the anniversary of the emperor's names-day, and that of St. Alexander Nevsky, who is also the patron saint of Petersburg. On the latter account, there was a grand procession of the clergy, from the Casan Church to the monastery of St. Alexander Nevsky, where his mortal remains and mysterious relics are deposited, and which the empress and other parts of the imperial family, with thousands of pious or curious persons, accompanied.

I did not attend this procession; such ceremonies being by no means congenial with my feelings and sentiments, as they partake

Digitized by Google

too much of the important nothingness of this world to interest me. Above all, I pity the man whom circumstances compel to a life of monastic seclusion, or who has his energies and active benevolence cramped by the dull and monotonous observances of forms and ceremonies. It is from the spirit of rational liberty, the study of men and manners, and contemplating the unaffected simplicity of nature, that I derive my highest gratifications.

> "Thou, Nature, art my goddess; to thy laws
> My services are bound! Wherefore should I
> Stand in the plague of customs?"

And yet, without doubt, such ceremonials operate powerfully on the minds of men, and become important, if not necessary, engines in their political management; and at the same time, serve essentially to demonstrate the tone of national character.

In the evening, the imperial yachts on the river were illuminated.

Soon after this time, the variability of the weather began to indicate that the summer

Digitized by Google

was rapidly drawing to a close, and to announce the approach of winter. This is a subject, however, which I am induced to reserve for an exclusive chapter.

On the 17th of October, the ship Kitty, Captain Warren, arrived at Cronstadt, after the short passage of ten days from London, having been only thirty-five days from this port, during which time she had delivered her cargo in the London Docks. This is her fourth voyage to St. Petersburg during the present summer; and, if she returns safe to London, is more than any vessel has before accomplished. She had, however, a narrow escape this time from being wrecked on the Island of Dagho, in consequence of being deceived by a false light, that of the proper light-house having been extinguished, whether by accident or design, as in the anecdote previously related in my voyage to this country, I had no opportunity of ascertaining. I have since learnt that she eventually reached London in safety.

I had the pleasure, one day in November, of meeting, at Sir William C——'s, Mr. L——,

Digitized by Google

a gentleman who was singular enough to drink salt and water instead of wine, and who, I am informed, is a great projector, having presented the government here with a variety of plans of proposed improvements; one of which was, to form a water communication, in a direct line, between Lake Ladoga and the Gulf of Finland, which would not only shorten the distance one-third, but ensure a safer and more ready communication than by the Neva, the rapid current and shoals of which river prove extremely dangerous to its navigation. The government, however, is said to have declined embracing any of his speculations, but have accorded so far with his personal interests, with respect to one of them, as to have made him a grant of a tract of land in Finland, with exclusive privileges, to enable him to work a mine there, which he pronounces to be exceedingly rich in copper ore.

Now we are on the subject of speculation, I will take the opportunity of noticing a threatened disappointment in a speculation of another kind, which occurred about this

Digitized by Google

time, and excited much conversation in St. Petersburg. A gentleman and lady, accompanied by a large party of friends, presented themselves, one morning, at the door of the English chapel, with the view of being linked together in the happy chain of matrimony, when, to their great consternation, it was announced that the clergyman was absent in the country, and not expected to return before the important hour of twelve, after which it was conceived the ceremony could not be performed. Independent of the annoying jocularity of their friends, other serious objections to the delay started up: all the preparations for the day were in advance; the apartments prepared, and the cooks busily employed in the necessary arrangements for the marriage-feast, and the subsequent ball in the evening. What is to be done? are these operations to be suspended, or are they to proceed? At three o'clock, however, the clergyman returned, and kindly consented to marry them at four. The bride recovered from her fainting fits, the bridegroom's spirits were re-assured, and the day concluded with

Digitized by Google

additional hilarity and happiness. The dilemma arose from a neglect in not duly advertising the clergyman of the day of marriage; the fault, however, lay with the clerk, who, on being applied to, informed the gentleman that it was quite unnecessary to pre-engage the clergyman, as he always remained at home until after one o'clock.

A still more ludicrous disappointment happened during the present summer, at the same chapel. A wedding party had assembled, and were waiting for the clergyman, when the bridegroom, whispering to the bride that he wished to step out for an instant, quitted the church. The clergyman soon made his appearance, but the bridegroom was not to be found; and, after waiting for nearly two hours, the party were obliged to return to their homes without the ceremony being performed. It proved that the gentleman had gone out with the view of asking an old and particular friend to be father to his bride; but, being a broker, had unfortunately, instead of entering at once upon the subject of his visit, commenced with a point of business,

Digitized by Google

which so absorbed him, as to entirely put the more immediate concern out of his head; so that he literally forgot his bride and all the promised happiness he had been so near realizing. The ceremony was, however, performed on the following day, to the surprise of many of the ladies, who declared that, after such neglect, they would have rejected such a husband *in toto*.

We now arrived near the close of the year, and this without any permanency of that rigorous frost which so usually characterises a Russian winter, but of which we were yet destined to have a specimen. The river did not close permanently until a few days before Christmas. The days now attained their shortest length; and the season, owing to this cause, and the uncertainty and variability of the weather, became a most disagreeable one; numerous sources of occupation and amusement were, however, still open to me; and what between the pleasures of society, and the pursuit of information respecting those parts of the empire I was so soon to travel through, and which I gleaned not only by

Digitized by Google

personal inquiry, but also from the best authors on the subject, whether ancient or modern, I had no reason to complain that the hours hung, heavily or unpleasantly, on my hands. Occasionally I occupied myself in studying the geography of Russia, tracing my intended route with the finger. I beg to observe, however, that I was always particularly cautious in divulging my real plans; on the contrary, I rather endeavoured to keep them concealed, by appearing to show a greater interest with respect to parts that I least contemplated visiting. This reserve appeared to be necessary, to avoid fruitless argument, and prevent my being accused of wild and chimerical views, and which the world are too fond of giving me the credit of.

I had the gratification of celebrating the happy festival of Christmas *a l'Anglois*, with a party of my countrymen.

On the following evening the whole city was in agitation, from an extensive fire breaking out, the light from which, in consequence of the clearness of the atmosphere, was so vivid as to illuminate every part of the town.

Digitized by Google

All the inhabitants imagined it in their own neighbourhood; whereas it proved to be in the suburbs, a quarter of a mile from the Peterhof Gate. It originated in an immense wooden building, used as a cloth manufactory; and, notwithstanding the prompt and energetic exertions of the well-regulated fire-police, was soon entirely consumed. Fires are here always more formidable in winter, on account of the greater difficulty in procuring supplies of water.

This being the holiday season, our dinner parties were unusually numerous; and, as far as the most sumptuous cheer, and rational and brilliant conversation could effect it, were in the highest degree interesting; so that we seldom separated without regret.

> " 'Tis pain to depart in the luminous hour
> Of wine and of wit, when the heart is in flower,
> Which shoots from the lip, under Bacchus's dew,
> In blossoms of thought, ever springing and new."

Nor was the softer and fascinating converse with the fairer sex neglected, or undervalued, by us; for few evenings passed without en-

Digitized by Google

gagements to balls or musical parties, in which they shone most conspicuous.

"—— Oh, woman! whose form and whose soul
Are the spell and the light of each path we pursue!
Whether sunn'd at the tropics, or chill'd at the pole,
If woman be there, there is happiness too!"

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

Commencement of the new year—Market of frozen provisions—Russian new year—Gustinoy-Dwar—Introduction to Grand Duke Michael, and his polite attentions—Sir James Wylie—Opinion of the oculists respecting the Author's defect of vision—Visit to the house of Peter the Great—General Yefremoff, and a dinner *a la Cossaque*—Anecdotes of the general—Preparation to leave St. Petersburg.

On the 1st of January, 1823, I had the pleasure of dining with a party of English at Mr. L——'s, in order to welcome the new year; which holiday is, by most foreigners, doubly celebrated in this city, some keeping the new style, while others adhere to the old.

On the fourth of this month, in company with my friend C——, I visited the market of frozen provisions, where the produce of no less than two thousand sledges are exposed for sale, the whole of which were nearly disposed of.

Digitized by Google

Monday, the 13th, was the Russian new-year's-day, on which the inhabitants make it a rule to call upon, or to send cards of congratulation to all their friends.

On the 18th, the grand ceremony of blessing the waters of the Neva took place, of which I have given a full description in another place.

On the 21st, I accompanied a friend to the Gustinoy-Dwar, or quarter for shops, with a view of making purchases. These shops are comprised in two square buildings of immense extent, the one contained within the other, the inner constituting a body of warehouses, from which the retail shops, situated in the outer quadrangle, draw their supplies. The latter is two stories in height, and ornamented with a colonnade around both of them.

On the 2d of February, the emperor made his first appearance in St. Petersburg, after his return from Verona, and was received with every indication of joy by his subjects.

On the 14th of this month I had the honour, with some other friends, of being introduced, by Sir James Wylie, to the Grand Duke

Digitized by Google

Michael, who, in the most condescending manner, was pleased to conduct us over the Artillery School, which is under his especial patronage. The great order and regularity of this institution afforded me the highest gratification. I was particularly interested by two boys from Iceland, and several young Cossacks, who were educating in this school. His royal highness afterwards was pleased to accompany us to the Artillery Hospital, and from thence to the hospital of the imperial guards, in both of which every attention appeared to be paid to the cleanliness, comfort and welfare of the patients. There was one poor fellow who, under the delirium of a fever, had fractured his own skull with a hammer; he was, however, in a fair way of recovery.

I feel myself highly indebted to Sir James Wylie's kindness for various other attentions, and particularly for the active interest he took in my defect of vision. He not only personally examined my eyes, but introduced me to some of the most eminent oculists of St. Petersburg. Unfortunately, however, the result only afforded a confirmation of the

Digitized by Google

many previous opinions that I had been favoured with on this subject; all agreeing that, until some change took place in the state of the organ, an operation was not likely to prove beneficial.

On Tuesday, the 18th, I paid a visit to the first house that was inhabited in this city by its founder, Peter the Great; a gratification of my curiosity which I had frequently before been anxious to indulge, but could not induce any of my friends to fix a time for accompanying me. I have often been impressed by the indisposition, or, perhaps, more properly speaking, habit of procrastination, which many acquire with respect to points that admit of being effected at any time; and have been compelled to goad them, as it were, to gratify themselves with what they have long proposed to accomplish, but had never undertaken, because they considered it at all times within their reach. For my own part, however, I never wish to lose sight of the old proverb—"*Carpe Diem.*"

This interesting hut, still in good preservation, is built of larch wood, to which its great

Digitized by Google

durability is attributed: it is, however, protected by a temporary building. It comprises only three small rooms, one of which was the monarch's bed-chamber. In the corner of the latter was a priest's cloak, hanging on a peg, an image, and a censer, intended for the use of a clergyman who performs some religious ceremony here at stated periods; such is the veneration in which this almost sacred building is held by the Russians, who regard it as the germ from which their magnificent city originated.

There is also a boat preserved under the same temporary roof, which was built by this extraordinary man: it is a kind of Dutch yawl, clinker built, with the head and stern alike, and is now in a very decayed state.

Thursday, the 27th, was a day of high gratification to me, as I had the honour of dining *a la Cossaque*, with the celebrated General Yefremoff, at the village appropriated for the quarters of the Cossack troops stationed at St. Petersburg, and which is situated about a mile beyond the Nevsky Monastery. Our party was received by the general in the most

Digitized by Google

warm and friendly manner. I was, I believe, the only stranger present; but his polite attentions soon banished all reserve. He had even the condescension to bring me his helmet, and a variety of other articles, which he thought might interest me to examine. He also ordered in some of his soldiers, that I might examine their uniform and accoutrements. How gratifying to receive such attentions from such a man! and how unjust, to designate, as barbarous, a nation, one of whose members, risen from the rank of a common soldier, can shew so much sentiment and sensibility to an apparently unfortunate individual like myself!

Previous to dinner being announced, we were tempted to whet our appetites with caviare, dried fish from the Don, cheese, &c. with brandy and various other liquors, including a peculiar spirit, made in the country of the Don Cossack, in which the buds of the birch-tree had been infused, that made it so bitter as to be quite nauseous.

At length dinner was served up—if in order, in a very reverse one to what I had been

Digitized by Google

accustomed. The first dish was corned beef, followed by sturgeon, which, in its turn, was succeeded by soup; after this we had a variety of made-dishes and of game, while roasted meats brought up the rear.

We had a great variety of wines, comprising Madeira and French wines; but these were neglected for the more agreeable ones from the general's own estates, in the Don Country. Most of these were very sweet and effervescent, like champaigne and cyder, agreeable to the taste, but, at the same time, highly treacherous, and sure to give a severe head-ache next day if indulged in, particularly when drank, as is usually done here, out of tumblers.

As soon as dinner was concluded, we retired into an adjoining room, to take coffee; about an hour after which a most sumptuous dessert was introduced. The glass now again circulated with freedom; and, as there was no escaping the vigilance of a Cossack general, I am afraid few of our party could hope to escape the penalty of the succeeding morning. Our good host was the life of his company:

Digitized by Google

nor do I recollect when I ever spent a more animated and happy day.

While taking our wine, some Cossack children occasionally ran into the room, one of whom, a little girl of about three years of age, I took into my arms, and presented with wine, which she appeared to take with much relish; in short, she was so contented with her situation, as to be unwilling to leave me.

The novelty of our entertainment was, however yet to come. A dozen strapping Cossacks now entered the room, and began to entertain us with a variety of their national songs, the whole singing together, but each taking separate parts. After this had proceeded for a time, all on a sudden, they caught up one of our party, laid him out on their arms, and began tossing him into the air, thus making him dance to the tune of their song; this was repeated in succession with each individual, and considered a great compliment, which was returned by a present of money. It was practised upon the general himself as well as his visitors. A single individual of our party alone escaped this dance in the air:

Digitized by Google

del.t by Gauci jun.r

Printed by N. Chater & C.o 33 Fleet St.

Vol. 1. Page. 46

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

he was one of the imperial chamberlains, and so bulky, that the Don amateurs were actually shy of amusing themselves with his person.

I shall conclude the above account, with a few historical anecdotes of our noble host.

At the period of the battle of Leipsic he had attained only the rank of colonel, and had then the honour of saving his emperor from falling into the hands of the enemy. He was advancing at the head of three hundred cossacks, when he met his imperial majesty, closely pressed by a body of French cavalry. He was ordered by the emperor to charge the French with the view of allowing him time for escape; this, notwithstanding the great disparity of force, was effected in the most gallant manner; the clouds of dust which their advance occasioned prevented the enemy from ascertaining their numbers, while the horrid yell which always accompanies the charge of these troops, struck such terror into the hearts of their adversaries, that they speedily retreated. For this important service, Colonel Yefremoff received from the emperor's hand, on the field of battle, the order of St. George, of which he

Digitized by Google

is more proud than of all the other laurels won by him during the war. The rank of general soon followed, and he now stands next to the hetman.

During the retreat of the French army, his gallant conduct attracted so forcibly the attention of Murat, who commanded the French cavalry, that he sent him a valuable watch, accompanied by a flag of truce, with the request that it might be presented to the gallant officer who commanded the cossack troops, as a mark of his esteem, for the activity and bravery he had so often witnessed. What an honourable testimonial to receive from an enemy!

Sunday, March 9th. The weather is now become so much milder that the snow is fast disappearing in the streets, and I consequently become anxious to expedite my departure for Moscow, under the apprehension that I might otherwise lose the advantage of the snow-roads, which is considered, beyond comparison, the most pleasant and expeditious mode of travelling in this country. I determined, therefore, to limit my remaining residence in this city to three or four days more

Digitized by Google

at farthest; on enquiry, however, I had the mortification of learning, that the Moscow diligence, in which I proposed to take my place, was already on its wheels, in consequence of a deficiency of snow for more than a hundred versts from St. Petersburg; but that after proceeding thus far, we should again meet with snow which would carry us more than four hundred miles in a S. E. direction. This proves, what, however, I believe, all philosophers have admitted, that the interior of a country is colder in winter, in proportion to its latitude, than those parts which are nearer its coasts; and it appears also, that it is in the same ratio warmer in summer: for instance, the degrees of cold in winter, as well as of heat in summer, are much greater at Moscow than at St. Petersburg, notwithstanding its latitude is nearly five degrees more southerly. The reason of this is, that the surface of the earth, which is solid and opaque, attains the temperature of the atmosphere, sooner than the surface of the sea, which is constantly changing its particles, until its whole depth is brought to a similar tempera-

Digitized by Google

ture; consequently it is longer in cooling during winter, and warming during summer.

I recollect having frequently experienced an illustration of this principle, when sailing southward, in winter time, from North America. We always knew when we were within the influence of a current (or gulf-stream, as sailors term it, from its coming from the Gulf of Florida, whence it runs northward along the coast of America,) by the increase of atmospheric temperature arising from the warmer exhalations of this current, the water of which always proves, on examination, to be comparatively warm.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

Situation of St. Petersburg—Difficulties to be contended against by its founder—Brief description of the city—The author's explanatory observations respecting himself—The Peterhof road—Oranienbaum—Peterhof—Chateau of Strelna—Gatchina—The Pavlosky palace—Sarskoe-Selo—Kamenoi Ostrof—New chateau on the Yellagin Island—The fortress—The Isaac Church—The Cazan Church—The Nevsky Monastery—The Catholic Church.

BEFORE taking leave of St. Petersburg, it will naturally be expected that I should make some remarks concerning this city and its neighbourhood. My notices of these points, however, must necessarily be very incomplete, and, possibly, in some instances, from the peculiarity of my situation, inaccurate; I profess, therefore, to confine myself to such facts, as either became more expressly the subjects of my own enquiries, or accidentally fell in my way.

Digitized by Google

To preserve consistency in my remarks, I shall comprise them under a variety of heads: and, in the first place, shall attempt to convey the result of my observations, respecting the situation, localities, and neighbourhood of this interesting capital.

The situation of St. Petersburg, so named by its immortal founder, Peter the Great, is, in consequence of its neighbourhood to the Baltic sea, and its communications with the interior by water, by no means ill adapted to be the capital of this immense empire, whether we look to the facility afforded to intercourse with its own distant provinces, or with those nations of Europe, with whom it may maintain political, or commercial relations.

In bringing this city, however, to its present grandeur, many disadvantages, both of situation and climate, were to be contended against. The land which it occupies was, originally, little better than a morass, and, perhaps, affords, at this time, one of the most glorious instances of the rapid triumph of art over nature; since the industry of man has, in little more than a century, clothed its naked marshes

Digitized by Google

with superb palaces, embellished by scenery of the most interesting description. In short, St. Petersburg, previously an insignificant village, and comprising only a few fishermen's huts, is now become one of the most extensive, populous, and magnificent cities in the world.

It is situated, more immediately, on the banks and islands of the Neva, a considerable river, which receiving its waters from the Ladoga Lake, after a course of forty miles, pours its rapid and chrystalline stream into the Gulf of Finland.

This city stands upon a considerable extent of ground, which, however, is not yet wholly occupied by building, but comprises many extensive gardens. According to the latest accounts, its population consists of more than two hundred and fifty thousand souls, comprising natives from almost every civilized part of the world. Its streets are broad, and well-built; its few squares elegant and spacious; its architecture rich and varied; and its churches, palaces, and public buildings, numerous and magnificent. It is impossible to describe the gratification which,

Digitized by Google

notwithstanding my loss of vision, I derived from my frequent contemplations of the various objects of interest it contains.

The reader will, probably, wonder how I could derive, in this way, any actual gratification, or correct ideas of the objects themselves. As this is an universal objection, applicable to my whole scheme of travel, I shall avail myself of the present opportunity of explaining and defending myself.

The various organs of sense are the mere instruments by which the impressions of external objects are conveyed to the mind, which then reasons upon, and draws its inferences respecting, the nature of these objects. The conclusions thus arrived at, are, consequently, mere *ideas*, and yet they comprize all we can really know, respecting the appearances, forms, and qualities of whatever is external to us; and in this sense our whole knowledge of the external world is but ideal.

Now, so as ideas are excited in the mind respecting the existence of external things, it matters not through what senses the impressions from which they are derived are

Digitized by Google

cumstances. But it will be urged, that the knowledge thus attained, cannot be depended upon as strictly correct. This I admit; but it matters not as to the ultimate effect, as regards the feelings of the individual;—the operations of his mind may be called forth with equal force, and, aided by the power of imagination, and the recollections of pre-existent analogies, or other information acquired previous to his loss of the organ in question, its conclusions may, notwithstanding many inaccuracies, be equally decided, and, perhaps, equally agreeable, as under ordinary circumstances. Hence the opinions I am led to form, of the countries through which I travel, afford me ineffable delight. There is, however, probably, another advantage,—that the atten-

Digitized by Google

tion being chiefly directed to the more grand and interesting features, the meaner ones are in a proportionate degree excluded.

The reader will, probably, now comprehend the manner in which I arrive at what, perhaps, may be termed an *ideal* knowledge of the places I visit. Accompanied by an intelligent friend, or some other guide, I examine every place of interest,—touch what I can, and hear of all; and then combining the information thus gained with previously acquired knowledge of the subject, and some portion of imagination, a picture is produced, comprising, in my mind, a strong impression of reality, and answering the purpose to *me*, almost as well as if I had actually seen it. How far my descriptions of such pictures correspond with the actual lineaments of the objects themselves, I must leave to others to determine.

I shall now attempt a brief, but, I fear, very imperfect, account of the more remarkable palaces, or other magnificent public buildings with which this metropolis, and its environs, abound. The approach from Germany is by

Digitized by Google

one of the most magnificent roads that can be imagined, and which, from its leading to the imperial palace of Peterhof, is termed the Peterhof Road. It consists, for a distance of twenty versts, of one continued line of elegant villas, which are the summer residences of the nobles, and more wealthy merchants. To the westward of this road, in the direction of Cronstadt, is situated the palace of Oranienbaum, formerly the favourite residence of Peter the Third, whence he was forcibly conducted to Roptsha, previous to his imprisonment and death. This palace, which commands delightful views of the Gulf of Finland, Cronstadt, and the Finnish coast, is still kept up, although the imperial family never reside at it; occasional visits are, however, made to its gardens, when the court is at Peterhof. A colony of Germans has been established, by government, in its immediate vicinity, who derive much emolument, in the summer season, from letting their houses to the citizens of St. Petersburg.

At the extremity of the Peterhof Road, and at the distance of thirty versts from St. Peters-

Digitized by Google

burg, is the Palace of Peterhof, situated on the brow of a hill, sufficiently elevated to admit a view of the Gulf of Finland and port of Cronstadt, over the tops of the trees which surround it. It was built by Peter the Great, in the year 1711, from a plan of the celebrated Leblonde. Circumstances did not admit of my visiting the interior of this palace. The gardens are elegantly laid out, with innumerable fountains, or *jets d'eau*, and which, being illuminated by thousands of variegated lamps, during *fêtes*, which are occasionally given here, produce one of the most magnificent spectacles that can be conceived. The multitudes of people who throng to enjoy these spectacles are incredible; the city becomes a comparative solitude: every horse, carriage, and boat, is put into requisition;—nay, such is the crowd on the Peterhof Road, that the dust from the carriages is said to resemble the smoke of a furnace!

In this neighbourhood, the stranger will be much interested by the elegant Chateau of Strelna, the occasional residence of the Grand Duke Constantine, and where he, some years

Digitized by Google

since, entertained the English residents in the most sumptuous manner. Adjoining, is the celebrated monastery of the same name, and which has a fine appearance as you sail along the coast.

Gatchina, where the empress mother resides during a part of the year, is another of the more distant palaces which deserves the attention of the traveller. It was once inhabited by the Emperor Paul.

About thirty versts from the city, is the Pavlosky, a truly charming place; perhaps as much indebted to nature, as to art, for its various beauties. This was the late emperor's favourite summer residence, and is, in consequence, equally prized by his widow, who makes it her chief abode. This lady, who is of a cheerful disposition, here assembles around her all the beauty and fashion of the country.

The grounds of the Pavlosky are very extensive, beautifully laid out and wooded, and with numerous walks, tastefully disposed. The flower-beds, however, appear to be singularly arranged, each species having a *parterre* to itself; for instance, there was a large bed of

Digitized by Google

carnations, another of tulips, a third of mignionette, and so forth, in succession, throughout its whole Flora.

Somewhat nearer to the city is the superb Palace of Sarskoe-Selo, (or, in English, the imperial village,) where Catharine the Second principally resided, and acted many of those scenes which have procured her, from the world, the most adverse epithets. This palace, however, is chiefly indebted to the reigning emperor for its present magnificence, and who has left nothing undone which could contribute to its beauty and splendour.

I had the pleasure of spending a most delightful day with a lady who resides at this palace, and who, in the most obliging manner, conducted me through its various apartments. To attempt a minute description of all that is capable of interesting the reader, would require a tedious detail; I shall, therefore, only advert to the more remarkable points of attraction.

In the first place, we were shewn the apartments which had replaced that portion of the palace that was burnt down last year, and

Digitized by Google

which has now been restored, in every respect, to its original state, even silks of similar patterns having been expressly sent for from China. The fire in question broke out in the chapel, and was chiefly arrested by the judicious conduct of the emperor, who attended in person, and ordered an intermediate part of the building to be pulled down, to stop the progress of the flames.

The most beautiful apartments in this palace are, the amber room, the pearl room, and the Chinese room. The walls of the first are covered with amber, with festooned pannels, in the centres of some of which are various ornaments, in *pietra dura*. The amber which decorates this room, was presented to the Empress Elizabeth by Frederick II. of Prussia.

The pearl room is so called from its floor and walls being richly inlayed with mother-of-pearl: the doors, which are of the rarest woods, are also superbly ornamented with the same material. In this room are four valuable tables of *lapis lazuli*.

The Chinese, or japanned room, was Catha-

Digitized by Google

rine's audience-chamber, where she received her own and the foreign ministers. It is adorned with numerous pagodas and Chinese figures, and has an unique appearance. The ceilings of the whole of these rooms are beautifully painted.

The ball-room is of immense size; nearly two hundred feet in length, and eighty in breadth, with thirteen windows on each side of it.

After being entertained at the palace with a most sumptuous dinner, we were taken in an equipage, drawn by four horses, termed a linea,* through the park to the village of Bablova, where the emperor has a set of baths. One of these, which has not yet been fitted for use, consists of an enormous circular basin, cut out of a single block of granite, about eighteen feet in diameter, and seven in depth.

The pleasure-grounds of Sarskoe-Selo are

* This linea may be compared to two long sofas placed back to back, sufficiently capacious to accommodate eight persons on each side, with a regular coach-box in front, and a place for the footman behind.

Digitized by Google

delightful in the extreme, although entirely artificial.

Among other objects deserving of notice here, is a superb building, which serves the purpose of a farm-yard, being occupied by various breeds of cattle, which the emperor has caused to be imported from different parts of the world: among these are English cattle, from Teeswater. The luxurious accommodation of these animals, forcibly reminded me of Caligula's marble stables and gilded oats. The celebrated lamas, brought from Lima, succeed here, and are very picturesque objects in the grounds. Attached to the farm is a cottage, elegantly plain in its exterior, but internally handsomely fitted up, for the occasional reception of their majesties; the walls are decorated with eight small paintings, in old-fashioned frames, one of which is said to have cost a hundred and seventy-five thousand roubles!!

On our return to the palace in the evening, a fine military band was playing to the inhabitants in front of it. The concluding piece was the Evening Hymn, and so exquisitely

Digitized by Google

fine, as almost to ravish the soul from its earthly tenement.

At the distance of about three miles from St. Petersburg, is a small, interesting island of the Neva, named Kamenoi-Ostrof, which has a palace, that is occasionally visited by the emperor and empress.

His imperial majesty has, however, lately built one of the most magnificent chateaus in the world, for the residence of his mother, on another of the cluster of these islands of the Neva, named Yellagin Island.

The above islands, in the immediate vicinity of St. Petersburg, to which they are connected by handsome bridges, may be regarded almost as fairy scenes, and are flocked to by all ranks, as favourite places of summer resort. The empress mother frequently takes excursions about them in elegant gilded barges; when the characteristic costume of her party, and the melody of accompanying music, accordant with the measured cadence of the oars, combine to produce almost the effect of enchantment.

It was formerly a custom in Russia, and

Digitized by Google

indeed is still observed as such in some parts of the empire, to make excursions on the water, in boats elegantly fitted up for the occasion, accompanied by bands of vocal and instrumental music; the performers were chiefly slaves, well skilled in that delightful science. What, however, surpassed every other kind, is a horn music, peculiar to this country, the mellow tones of which are exquisitely and indescribably harmonious.

> "In cadence sweet, now dying all away,
> Now swelling loud again, and louder still,
> Clear and sonorous."

Having given an account of most of the imperial palaces situated in the vicinity of St. Petersburg, I will not weary my reader with descriptions of the various noble residences comprised more immediately within the city itself, although many of them are well worthy of attention; but shall conclude the present chapter with a brief notice of the citadel, or fortress, and a few of the principal churches.

The fortress is situated on what is named Petersburg Island, and contains a church

Digitized by Google

within it, in which are deposited the remains of some of the czars of Russia, and various banners, keys of towns, and other trophies, chiefly taken from the Turks. There is one English flag, which we must charitably suppose to have been captured in battle, although I am credibly informed it belonged to a cutter that was cast on shore during the war. You are shewn here, as a curiosity, a boat, said to have been built by the hands of Peter the Great.

The mint, where the national money is coined, is also comprised within the walls of the fortress; also a manufactory of verdigris.

St. Petersburg is by no means deficient in churches. The Empress Catharine erected great numbers, the principal of which was the one dedicated to St. Isaac, but also known as the Marble Church. What is singular, this church (with the exception of the Grand Duke Constantine's palace) was very lately the only stone building in the whole city. It is now, however, taken down, the emperor having selected its site for a splendid new

Digitized by Google

church, to be built upon the plan of a French architect. Unfortunately, however, after an immense expence incurred, the foundations have been found inadequate to support the mass of the new intended superstructure; so that the new building is at a stand, until either some plan is devised for strengthening the foundation, or a new spot selected. In whatever way this point may be decided, one thing is certain—that a church must be re-erected on the site of the Isaac, since it is a superstitious custom amongst these people, that where a church has once been, a church must continue to be;—nay, if one is taken down, with a view of rebuilding it, some portion of the old edifice must remain; and this is the reason why the foundations of the Isaac Church have not been entirely razed.

A law exists in Russia, which must materially obstruct the building of churches by the noble or wealthy, which is, that they are ever after obliged to maintain an officiating clergyman.

The Cazan Church was commenced in the

Digitized by Google

year 1801, by the Emperor Paul, and finished by the present monarch, in 1811. With the exception of its fine granite pillars, it contains nothing remarkable.

In the chapel of the Nevsky Monastery is a rich shrine of St. Alexander, made of silver, and surmounted by a canopy of the same. Various relics of the saint, presented by the Emperor Alexander, are shown on a silver stand, covered by glass. In the burying-ground lies the famous Suvaroff, and many of the principal nobility of Russia.

In the Catholic Church, the stranger will probably be interested by the simple tablet erected to the memory of General Moreau. This tablet, which is encircled by a small iron railing, that extends scarcely six inches from the wall, bears the following inscription: "General Moreau, born at Morlaix, August, 1763; died September 13, 1813."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

The literary character of Russia—Imperial Library—The Museum—The Mint—The Author's feelings and power of discrimination—The College of Mines—Paper Manufactory—Lapicides—Glass Manufactory—Foundling Hospital—Asylum for the Blind—Deaf and Dumb Asylum.

THE literary character of Russia is at present in its infancy; it is, however, under the patronage of his imperial majesty, in a state of progressive growth, which will, probably, lead to a respectable maturity; although it is not likely, for the present, to rival the vigour and strength of the other leading European nations, or of the United States of America.

There cannot be a stronger evidence of the present extent of Russian literature, and at the same time of the attention paid to promote it, than what the Imperial Library affords.

Digitized by Google

This noble institution, situated in the Nevsky Perspective, adjoining the French Theatre and the Anitshkin Palace, the residence of the Grand Duke Nicholas, is a handsome quadrangular building, three stories in height, and containing no less than three hundred thousand volumes, of which only seven thousand are in the Russian language, being the whole produce of its literature, and those principally on ecclesiastical subjects; the number of English works is about the same, the great bulk of the collection being French, Latin, and German.

The manuscripts, however, form the more interesting part of the collection; a number of which are extremely valuable; some of these I had the pleasure of examining,—and amongst them a quantity brought from France, during the late revolution, by M. Dubrowsky, who was attached to the Russian embassy at Paris, comprising many original letters from crowned heads, their ministers, and chief nobility; amongst the rest, is a remarkably curious, highly-illuminated missal,

Digitized by Google

bound in purple velvet, which belonged to Mary Queen of Scots, and contains original verses, and other remarks, as well as her signature, in her own hand-writing.*

Among other curiosities, preserved in the same room with the manuscripts, is a copy of the standard of Posharsky, in red silk; also, a portrait of the Virgin Mary, the lines of which consist of minute writing; and a slate, on which the last lines of the poet Dershavin are preserved, as written by his own hand.

There is also a considerable collection of Chinese books and charts; and I had the pleasure of being introduced to Dr. Henderson, a missionary, who was a daily visitor to the library, for the purpose of studying the Ethiopian language.

This library is thrown open to the public every Tuesday; but, by especial permission, may be seen on any other day, excepting Sundays and holidays.

* For extracts from these interesting documents, see Appendix C.

Digitized by Google

The Konskamara, or Museum, contains an immense number of interesting specimens of the works of nature or of art, many of them truly objects of great curiosity. It is impossible to enumerate all that is capable of exciting, in the highest degree, the attention of a visitor; but the following will, perhaps, more particularly be deemed deserving of his regard:—

In the first room, on the ground floor—a mass of native iron, which is said to have fallen from the clouds, weighing one thousand three hundred and sixty-eight pounds, and brought from Siberia by Professor Pallas; also, a variety of specimens of porphyry, petrifactions, &c.

In the second room—an immense number of mineralogical specimens; with models of the furnaces made use of in the mines of Siberia.

In the third room—a large collection of different shells and fossils; and an orrery, twelve feet in circumference.

The fourth room comprises—anatomical preparations, and a number of insects and

Digitized by Google

reptiles preserved in spirits, the more curious of which are, a child with two heads, encircled by a serpent; the dressed skin of Peter the Great's giant, seven feet three inches and a half in height, stuffed with hair; also that of his dwarf, prepared in the same manner, the hands and feet of which terminate in two forked points, instead of common fingers and toes; the skeletons of both these preparations are also preserved here. In this room a boa-constrictor serpent, twenty feet in length, is to be seen.

In the first room after ascending the stairs—is a stuffed elephant, and the skeleton of one of those stupendous animals, the mammoth, a name first given, by some Russian peasants, to the remains of an incognitum dug up in Siberia. The present animal was discovered, by a Tungoose chief, in 1799, with his flesh upon him, embedded in a mass of ice, through which a small part of the animal only was visible, and which then continued gradually to develope itself, until, at length, the Tungoose was enabled to cut off all his flesh and tusks, with the former of which he fed his dogs. It was not until seven years after its first discovery, that

Digitized by Google

Mr. Adams saw it, and caused it to be conveyed to St. Petersburg. Some have brought forward the perfect state of this animal as an argument of the present, or late, existence of the genus, but we have no other authority for giving credit to the supposition; and the probability is, that the high state of preservation in which it was found, is attributable to its inclusion in frozen matter, and that its had lain in that state for many ages.

The following extract from Jepherson's Virginia, relative to this animal, may not be uninteresting to the reader:—

"1st. The skeleton of the mammoth bespeaks an animal of from five to six times the cube volume of the elephant, as M. de Buffon has admitted.

"2nd. The grinders are five times as large, are square, and the grinding surface studded with four or five rows of blunt points; whereas those of the elephant are board and thin, and their grinding surface flat.

"3rd. I have never heard an instance, and suppose there has been none, of the grinders of an elephant being found in America.

Digitized by Google

"4th. From the known temperature and constitution of the elephant, he could not have existed in those regions where the remains of the mammoth have been found. The elephant is a native of the torrid zone and its vicinities: if, with the assistance of warm apartments and warm clothing, he has been preserved in life, in the temperate climates of Europe, it has only been for a small portion of what would have been his natural period, and no instance of his multiplication in them has ever been known. But no bones of the mammoth have ever been found further south than the salines of the north Holston, a branch of the Genissee, in about thirty-six degrees and a half north latitude, while they have been found as far north as the Arctic Circle."

These observations conclusively prove the total distinction between this animal and the elephant.

A variety of other animals are to be seen in the same room with the mammoth, and about four hundred specimens of birds.

In a gallery that leads from this room, are costumes of all the eastern nations subject to

Digitized by Google

Russia; among which are two wax figures, as large as life, representing Kamstchadale sorceresses, habited in the dress in which they practise their art. Around them hangs a string of rings, intermixed with pieces of iron; the left hand holds a musical instrument, resembling a rude tambourine; and the right a flat piece of wood, intended to beat it with. This room contains, also, a very neat Kamstchadale dog-sledge, and its model in ivory.

The second room above stairs contains—Peter the Great's turning lathe and working tools, and a chest-of-drawers made by himself, as well as various models of barges and ships; there is, also, the favourite horse he rode at the battle of Narva, and his dog, both stuffed. The room itself is ornamented with representations of his battles, in basso-relievo.

The third room contains—an exquisitely beautiful carving, in ivory, of Abraham on the point of sacrificing his son Isaac.

In the fourth is—a beautiful chandelier, made, in ivory, by Peter the Great; and several specimens of his works in brass.

The next room has—a figure of Peter him-

Digitized by Google

self, the hands and face in wax, habited in the identical suit he more ordinarily wore; the whole said to be a most perfect representation.

In the sixth room, the medals, many of which are very valuable, are deposited; they were, however, not exhibited.

In a room below stairs, there is a curious musical desk, containing many secret drawers, the work of an artist at Vienna, and which cost the Empress Catharine forty thousand roubles.

The Academy of Arts is well deserving attention, although as yet in too infant a state to enter into competition with the more celebrated schools of Europe. It contains, at present, about a hundred and seventy pupils, who are instructed in the arts of drawing, painting, sculpture, and engraving. The productions of the academicians are exhibited twice every year; they possess, however, so small a share of merit, that the only advantage which is hence derived, consists in the emulation which may be excited, and the gratification of their friends.

On entering the hall, the first room on the

Digitized by Google

right is the saloon, where the president and professors meet. It is ornamented with a full length portrait of the emperor, copied by one of the academicians from a French painter: there is also a picture of Peter the Great at the siege of Narva.

The two rooms on the left are occupied with statuary, and a series of casts from the Elgin and other marbles.

In a small recess, between the two next rooms, is a splendid statue of Napoleon, by Canova, of a colossal order, and which is the *bijou* of the academy. It was originally intended for the city of Hamburg, from whence it was sent to St. Petersburg, at the time the Russians were in possession of that place, in 1814, after which it lay for two years in the warehouse of a Russian merchant, previous to being received into the academy.

The pedestal of this statue was so high, that I could only reach the knees of the figure; but this was sufficient to satisfy me of its exquisite character. The knee-pan, the heads of the bones of the leg, the muscles that form the calf, the ancles, the contractions of the

Digitized by Google

toes, from the supposed weight of the body resting upon them, were all inimitable, so beautifully had the chissel written its delineations on this marble. My gratification on touching it was such, that I could with difficulty withdraw my hand; and had the leg been clothed with a real shoe and stocking, and of a natural temperature, I might have imagined it real.

In this room is a model representing the manner in which the immense block of granite, that forms the pedestal of the celebrated equestrian statue of Peter the Great, was transported over the morass to the water side, in order to be conveyed to St. Petersburg.

In another room were ten students, busily employed in drawing the human figure, from a living model.

Another establishment from which I derived a high gratification, was the Mint, where the various processes of separating the metal from its ores, forming it into bars, and the subsequent stamping of it into coin, the latter effected by machinery moved by the powerful action of the steam-engine, were explained by

Digitized by Google

the director, a Scotchman, who obligingly accompanied us. The laboratory was under the superintendance of a respectable old German, eighty years of age, who refused the remuneration offered him for his trouble, with a disinterestedness by no means common in this country; indeed, he was a *rara avis*. We were afterwards shown a fine collection of national medals struck at this place.

It may be expected that I should explain the nature of the interest I take in a visit to such a place as the present; for it will scarcely be admitted that the loss of sight can, on such an occasion, be compensated by the mental powers. Few who have the blessing of sight, give themselves time to consider what ideas they would entertain of external objects, if they were deprived of this sense, or how much pains they would take to compensate such deprivation. Indeed, it is scarcely possible for any one to have a right conception of the confidence which a person, who has been long afflicted with blindness, acquires, with respect to his various intercourses with the world.: time and experience must pro-

Digitized by Google

duce it, but reflection and judgment alone can bring it to perfection. There are, however, some points, particularly those which relate to personal intercourse, which may be more instantaneously acquired, as if by a principle of perceptive instinct; this, at least, my experience indicates;—for instance, when any one is conversing with me, I conceive myself to see the expression of countenance as the words are pronounced, almost as if I actually saw it, and, in ordinary cases, receive a similar kind of satisfaction. This may be accounted for from a combination of causes—as the tone of voice, the manner of speaking, and other circumstances, which excite in my mind an ideal picture of the features, personal qualities, manners, nay, even the character of the person conversing with me, particularly when aided by associations derived from my own experience. I thus satisfy myself, at least, with a representation according to my own conception, although my ideas, connected as they are with remembrances of what I have formerly seen, cannot have the same originality as

Digitized by Google

would be the case with persons who have been blind from their birth.

I am only actuated by any intense desire to see, when I meet with some one who excites more than ordinary interest in my feelings, or with any extraordinary productions of nature or art; it is then the imagination takes fire, and my desire to see increases with the difficulty, nay, impossibility, of gratifying it; then my feelings are worked up to such a pitch, that I become truly restless and impatient, when nothing but a change of place, or the introduction of a new subject sufficiently powerful to constitute a counteracting influence, can restore me to calm reflection.

If it be inquired how I can understand the structure and action of machinery, I would ask how the machinery in question came to be originally invented; doubtless, it would be replied, "By man's imagination." If so, how much easier may it be for my imagination to comprehend what has been reduced to practical demonstration, so evident, that a mere operative mechanic can execute it, from description only.

Digitized by Google

With respect to the different chemical processes carried forward in this establishment, as they all depend upon the well-known laws of chemical action, I could have no great difficulty in comprehending them. They chiefly relate to the separation, principally by means of acids, of the more precious metals, which always arrive from Siberia, or other mines, in a more or less impure state.

The College of Mines, or, as it is more commonly termed, the Mine Corps, is a very interesting place, situated on the right bank of the Neva, in the quarter of the town named Vasili-Ostroff. It was founded originally by Peter the Great, who, amongst the other benefits conferred on his country, has the honour of having laid open a new source of wealth to it, by causing researches to be made for metallic treasures in various parts of his empire. Mines were consequently opened in different governments, under the direction of this college, and particularly in Siberia: he also established a chief office for mines at Ekatarinenberg, a town which he built, and named after his empress.

Digitized by Google

The College of Mines contains a splendid collection of minerals, among which is one piece of malachite (oxyde of copper) said to weigh three thousand four hundred and fifty-six pounds, English.

There is one large room appropriated to models of every description, connected with mining; as, a beautiful representation of the section of a mine, steam-engines on various plans, &c. &c.

Under the garden, behind the college, an artificial mine has been constructed, which has the parts, windings, and different passages, that a real mine is supposed to possess, with different stratifications of rock, earth, veins of metal, &c. &c. The whole is most ingeniously executed, so that you might almost imagine yourself in a real mine.

A number of cadets are regularly instructed at this college in the science of mineralogy, and all the various operations connected with mining; after which they receive appointments to the different governments of the empire.

The paper manufactory, erected in 1750, by the Empress Elizabeth, and situated in the

Digitized by Google

neighbourhood of the Peterhof Palace, merits the inspection of the curious. Its beautiful and compact machinery was procured from England. One part of the building is appropriated to the purposes of the imperial lapicides, or polishers of precious stones. Here were exhibited a great variety of beautiful porphyries, jaspers, agates, &c. elegant vases, tables of malachite, and variegated marbles, as well as some curious ornamented pyramids, made by order of Catharine the Second, and intended one for each government in Russia, being specimens of the marble or other more valuable stones that they produce.

The government glass manufactory should not be passed over, where seven hundred and fifty workmen are kept constantly employed, half of them in cutting, grinding, and polishing this useful material. Yet, although many splendid specimens are produced, the Russian glass is not of equal quality with that of England or France, being more brittle, less sonorous, and not so exempt from colour. Their mirrors are some of them of great magnitude; the largest they ever made, I believe, measuring

Digitized by Google

fourteen feet by five feet ten inches. I examined one which had just been cast, eleven feet by four, the price of which would be about forty pounds sterling.

I also visited the iron-foundry, situated at the fourth verst on the Peterhof Road, under the superintendence of Mr. Clark. I was here shown, amongst other interesting things, the model of a cast-iron dam and locks, an invention of that gentleman's for the use of canals, and which it was imagined would come into general use, on account of its durability, economy, and less liability to be affected by frost. I was also much pleased with a neat iron spiral staircase, which had been cast for the Belvidere Lodge of the Sarskoe-Selo Palace, built after the model of the one in Windsor Park.

Public institutions may be regarded as the hobby-horses of the imperial family; and where they are conducted, as here, under the full controul of despotic power, must necessarily, with the great attention paid to them, evince the greatest degree of order and regularity, if not of perfection, so as to reflect

Digitized by Google

the highest credit on their respective patrons. An instance of the truth of this remark is met with in the Foundling-Hospital, under the immediate protection of the dowager empress, the extent of which is such, that no less than three thousand five hundred orphans are annually admitted. Only, however, five hundred of these are accommodated in the house, the remainder being sent into the country.

The little pensioners are immediately placed in charge of a number of nurses, kept in the house on purpose, from whom, as they increase in age, they are progressively transferred through the different departments of the establishment, appropriately constituted for their reception.

The system observed is intended to encourage industry, and with this view a routine of active employment, accordant with the age of the individual, is provided, so as to remind one forcibly of the three first of Shakspeare's seven ages.

A certain number of the girls receive accomplished educations for the purpose of being sent out as governesses, including

Digitized by Google

the French and German languages, music, dancing, &c.; and are occasionally married from the institution, in which case they receive a small portion from the empress. Many of the boys, also, are taught various languages, mathematics, &c.; while others are educated in the mysteries of different trades, according to their abilities or genius. It is from this source that the theatres are principally supplied with their performers.

There is no distinction of religion observed; except that if a child has not previously been christened, it is brought up in the Greek church. Every child is vaccinated as soon as admitted.

If any person wishes to place a child for a time only in this institution, he may do so on paying a hundred roubles, and designating it by some particular name; and any one may be taken from the institution, by giving a satisfactory security for its constant protection.

It will naturally be conceived, however, that I took still greater interest in a visit to the asylum for the blind, an institution which appeared to me excellently well regulated.

Digitized by Google

I found its poor, afflicted inmates all very usefully, or agreeably, occupied; some with music, reading, and other literary pursuits; others, in the manufacture of different works of art, as baskets, mats, ropes, &c.

The mode in which the art of printing was carried on, struck me as particularly interesting. The different types being arranged, alphabetically, in a box, are then transferred, with great expedition, (acquired by habit) into the grooves of a frame of wood, a proper portion of the subject in question having thus been composed, a damp sheet of paper is laid over it, and pressed with a cushion, after which, it is dried by a gradual and moderate heat, and in this way the surfaces of the letters are sufficiently elevated to be easily distinguished by the finger, by the assistance of which the correctness of the composition is ascertained. In accomplishing this both hands are used; one passes over the surface first, with a view of gaining a general idea, and is then immediately followed by the other to confirm it, the whole being effected with a celerity which surprises the stranger.

Digitized by Google

They all appear to have some knowledge of music, at least so far as to to take part in a hymn, which is sung before sitting down to dinner, and again on finishing the repast. We had the gratification of being present at this interesting ceremony; and after its conclusion, were entertained with an instrumental concert.

We visited their bed-chambers, where each individual had a clean comfortable bed, with every other convenient accommodation. In short, I left the place highly gratified, and deeply impressed with the benevolence of the Emperor, under whose especial patronage it is conducted.

There is, also, in this city, an interesting deaf and dumb asylum, which unforeseen circumstances prevented my visiting; and I intentionally omit noticing a variety of other institutions, fearing that the detail would be wearisome to my readers; as, for instance, various cadet corps, and many public seminaries for the education of the different classes of society, of both sexes.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

The Theatres—The Great or Stone Theatre—Prince Shafofsky—Dramatic taste of Russians—The Author not much interested by dramatic representations—The German stage—The French Theatre—No Italian Opera at St. Petersburg—Musical taste of the Russians—Promenades and pleasure gardens—Summer hills and ice hills—Skating—The English hunt—Horse racing—The English club—The German club.

Among the places of public entertainment, the theatres, of course, hold the first rank. There are few civilized countries in which the drama has not constituted a favourite amusement, and even been highly instrumental in forming, or evidencing, the national taste and character. The Russians may be regarded as considerably attached to it.

There are, however, at this time, only two theatres of any note in St. Petersburg; the great stone theatre, exclusively the property of

Digitized by Google

government, where both Russian and German performances are exhibited; and the small theatre, built of wood, in the Nevsky Perspective, occupied, for the present season, by a French company.

Prince Shafofsky is the principal writer for the Russian stage, and some of his translations of the English and French pieces, and particularly Ivanhoe, have been very successful. He has failed, however, in his attempts to translate the Scottish pieces of our great unknown, betraying the greatest ignorance both of the costume and national character of that people.

The prevailing taste of a Russian audience, however, at this time, is pantomime, accompanied by martial music, noise, smoke, and fighting. Incredible expence is lavished in the decorations of these pieces; and the orchestra yields to none in the world in strength, and to few in taste.

Being anxious to hear how the language sounded from the stage, I, one evening, visited the Russian theatre; the performance was a translation of Schiller's Joan of Arc, in which

Digitized by Google

the heroine, instead of the ignominious fate recorded in history, is made to receive a more glorious death in battle-field. The friends who accompanied me used every kind endeavour to make me comprehend the action of the piece, but I cannot say that I derived much gratification from the oratorical powers of the performers.

I must, however, candidly confess, in consequence of repeated trials, that, since my misfortune, theatrical amusements interest me much less than might be imagined; indeed, I recollect very few instances in which I have not been wearied out before the conclusion of the piece; I am, in general, far more pleased with a happy recitation in the closet, possibly, in some measure, because my mind is then less abstracted from the incidents of the piece, and more at liberty to clothe them with ideal scenery, and other embellishments, than it can do amidst the noise and confusion necessarily attendant upon a living representation on the stage; so that the intellectual gratification is diminished in proportion to the force of external impressions.

Digitized by Google

There appear, however, other reasons for this diminished gratification. It is only from the voice that I can draw my inferences of the powers of an actor, and unless his emphasis and intonations be perfectly correspondent with the sentiments of the piece, and which is too seldom the case, my imagination is at once broken in upon, and then adieu to all congenial sympathy, or decorative mental imagery. To hear a fellow chop his part, mechanically, into lame sentences, accompanied by improper emphasis, reminds me of the tide acting against the wind: In short, I cannot force my imagination to operate in contradiction to my senses, or prevent my ears, probably too nice in this respect, from detecting that hesitation, falsity of intonation, or indescribable something, which indicates that the feelings of a performer on the stage are seldom derived from the heart.

The German stage was originally an amateur theatre, where merchants, and various other respectable individuals, used to perform with great *eclat*. It is now in little estimation, although Angeli, who is both an excellent actor

Digitized by Google

and writer, is attached to it. Among other pieces, he has brought out Kenilworth, in a very creditable manner.

The feeling of inveterate hostility towards the French which succeeded the invasion of 1813, has, until very lately, prevented a French theatre from being opened in this city. A company of that nation has, however, not long since been imported, and, as the Russian nobility are all acquainted with the language, is receiving great encouragement, notwithstanding few of the actors are above mediocrity. They get up, however, small pieces, or vaudevilles, with much taste.

Some twenty years since, St. Petersburg had its Italian opera, the speculation, however, did not answer; this is, perhaps, a matter of surprise, as the Russians are so passionately fond of music, that in many of their houses they are entertained with it during dinner. On Sundays, and all the principal holidays, bands of music are stationed in the public gardens, and do not fail to attract a great number of people.

I shall avail myself of this opportunity of

Digitized by Google

making some remarks on the subject of Russian music, which possesses a considerable degree of character; nay, many of the national airs well merit the epithet of beautiful: besides, the language much resembles the Greek or Italian, as comprising a great number of vowels, and is therefore well adapted for harmony.

The singing heard at the court festivals affords a particular instance of the fascinating power of Russian vocal music. The aged General Partnensky, who has the direction of the emperor's choristers, was sent to Italy by Catharine the Second, expressly to perfect himself in the science of vocal music. On his return, he was directed to select the finest voices the empire could produce, and his band, without doubt, constitutes as perfect a set of vocalists as can be met with. With the exception of the misereres at Rome, I never derived so high a gratification from sacred music as it afforded me; one bass voice, in particular, I thought exceeded any thing I had heard in the latter place. Catalani, when at St. Petersburg, is said to have been moved

Digitized by Google

to tears by their magic expressions; and this is no uncommon occurrence with other amateurs.

Among the more popular amusements of the Russians, may be named the enjoyment of the many delightful promenades and gardens with which this city abounds. Among the former, the most conspicuous are, the English Quay, the Admiralty Boulevardes, and the Nevsky Perspective. The latter comprise chiefly the imperial pleasure grounds of Kamenoi-Ostroff, Kreslofsky, the Summer Gardens, situated in the city, and those of the principal nobility, which, particularly on Sundays and holidays, are thrown open for public accommodation. Here all sorts of amusements are provided for the people, as music, fire-works, puppet-shows, swings, summer wooden and winter ice hills, &c. &c.

The summer hill consists of an inclined wooden plane, along the grooves of which you are launched forward from an eminence, in a car just large enough to hold two persons, with their feet projecting on either side; the

Digitized by Google

impetus which is acquired in the descent is sufficient to carry you forward for a considerable distance after reaching the level. I ventured into the car, and found the sensation produced by no means disagreeable.

The ice hills, used in winter, are constructed upon similar principles. A wooden frame is first erected, and floored with slabs of ice, in the manner of a pavement; water is then poured over it, in order that, when frozen, it may fill up the interstices, and give a smooth surface.

Independent of the ice hills, the young men also amuse themselves during the winter by skating. The skating-ground on the Neva, in front of the English line, during my residence here, comprised a space of five hundred and twenty-five feet long, by two hundred and forty-five broad, which, being planted round with fir-trees, had a picturesque appearance. It is kept up by subscription, and men are constantly employed to keep it clear of snow, and to water it every night, so as to give a new surface in the morning.

Digitized by Google

The English residents amuse themselves also with their national diversions of hunting and horse-racing.

The establishment of the British Hunt, so called from having been first formed, and chiefly supported, by our countrymen, is at the village of Garilla, about twelve miles distant from the city, where they keep their dogs, and have accommodations for refreshment and lodging, after the sports of the day are concluded. It consists of about thirty couples of hounds, who chiefly hunt the hare, of which two species are met with in this country; the one somewhat less than our English hare, the other very large, and so strong as to give the dogs a hard chase. They occasionally fall in with a fox, who seldom fails to knock up the pack for the day. After partaking of the sports of the field, the members of the hunt, amongst whom are our ambassador, consul-general, and many respectable English and German merchants, return to Garilla to enjoy themselves in still more substantial pleasures, and talk over the feats of the day. I had once the pleasure of par-

Digitized by Google

taking of their festivities, and can bear ample evidence to the goodness of their cheer, and the conviviality, hilarity, and loyalty with which it was expended.

One circumstance is much complained of with respect to this hunt—that its meetings are generally held on a Sunday. The arguments against the propriety of this, however, have been rebutted by the merchant members, on the plea that, being confined to their counting-houses for six days in the week, the seventh only remains in which they can enjoy that pleasure and relaxation which is so important for the preservation of their health.

Horse-races are held repeatedly during the summer, generally on a new course which the emperor has lately presented to the public, situated between the Sarskoe-Selo and Peterhof Roads, at the distance of about three miles from the city.

There is a house of entertainment on the Peterhof Road, about five versts from the city, named Krasnoi-Coback, or the red house, to which numbers of the inhabitants resort, under

Digitized by Google

the pretext of eating a peculiar kind of pancake, named *waffle*, which is in the form of an oblong square, made in a mould, and is extremely light and agreeable in its flavour. This house has an exclusive privilege of selling liquors duty free, which was conferred upon it by Peter the Great, in consequence of his being in the habit of refreshing himself there when on his way to and from Cronstadt. The Empress Catharine II. also passed the night here, on her way to Peterhof, after assuming the reins of government on the imprisonment of her husband. The original house is yet standing; the business, however, is conducted in a more modern building, immediately adjoining to it.

I shall avail myself of the present opportunity of introducing my readers to some of the very respectable club-houses which exist at St. Petersburg.

There are two clubs more particularly celebrated, to both of which I had the honour of being admitted a visitor. The first, situated on the Moika Canal, between the red and blue bridges, and is named the English club, in

Digitized by Google

consequence of its having been originally established, more than fifty years since, by some of the English gentlemen employed in the counting-houses of the merchants here, with a view of benefitting the adverse fortunes of a Mr. Gardner, an eminent merchant, whom they constituted their *economе* or manager. It is now limited to three hundred and fifty members, natives as well as strangers, many of the first persons in the empire being enrolled among the former. Such, indeed, is the respectability attached to this society, and consequent desire to be amongst its members, that it generally takes three years to effect an admission.

Lord Cathcart, when ambassador at this court, was one of its earliest and warmest patrons. An anecdote is related with respect to this nobleman, that on the occasion of his health being drank at an anniversary dinner, at which he presided, a gentleman opposite, in the enthusiasm of the moment, forgetting he had not emptied his glass, while in the act of waving it over his head, discharged its contents full in his lordship's face, who

Digitized by Google

bore the salutation with such stoicism, as called forth the remark that "his lordship stands fire well."

As the club acquired extent and reputation, a code of laws for its government became indispensable; copies of which, in the English, German, and Russ languages, lie constantly on the table of the reading-room.

The management is vested in seven directors, of whom three are Russians, two Germans, and two English, one of the latter of whom is invariably the treasurer, and one of the first a person of the highest distinction.

The subscription varies from four to six guineas per annum, according to the state of their finances. A considerable additional revenue, however, is derived from other sources, as wines, cards, the billiard-room, &c.; that from cards alone being estimated at ten thousand roubles per annum.

Dinner may be had here any day at a regular charge of two roubles and a half: the sum, however, is doubled on particular occasions;—wines, of course, are not included, these being charged according to their qua-

Digitized by Google

lities. There are, however, regular dinners only three days in the week.

Every member is allowed to introduce a friend; but if the general number of these visitors exceeds twelve, each is expected to pay five roubles to the poor's fund. Strangers in St. Petersburg may be admitted for six months with all the advantages of members, excepting that their names must be inserted in the book by a member on each day of admission. After this time they are no longer regarded as strangers, but renew their alienship at any time, by residing six months out of St. Petersburg. At table, the gentlemen of each nation generally arrange themselves together. A variety of newspapers and other periodical works, constantly lie on the table of the reading-room.

The next club in estimation is termed the German Club, or, as being entirely composed of commercial men, the Commercial Club. Indeed, this character is so fully preserved, that no officer can be admitted, either as a member or visitor.

The German Club-House is a noble man-

Digitized by Google

sion, far more extensive than the purposes of the society require, and therefore the superfluous part is let out in lodgings. Here a most extensive variety of newspapers may be seen; and such is the resort of the mercantile world to this place, that, during the time of the Neva being impassable, it is used as a substitute for the exchange. It also contains an apartment used as a public ball-room.

The dinners given here are unusually large and splendid; and even the cabinet ministers occasionally participate in the hospitalities of the place. The one I partook of was on an ordinary occasion, and yet the champaigne corks flew about abundantly. I believe, however, that our countrymen, whether it is from want of taste or not, are less passionately fond of this beverage than other foreigners, particularly the Russians, the latter of whom not unfrequently drink it from tumblers.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

Hotels — Eating-houses and Coffee-rooms — Tea-houses — Lodgings — Boats on the river — Droshkas, or hackney carriages—Hire of a private equipage—Pedestrianism.

Amongst the public accommodations of a large city those are most important to the stranger, which contribute to his personal comforts. In these respects St. Petersburg is certainly defective; as its hotels and other places of entertainment of this kind, are very far from being equal to what are met with in London, Paris, and other capitals of Europe.

There are in this place some large hotels, although few, if any, merit the denomination of "good." Demont's, situated on the Moika canal, has the reputation of being the best;

Digitized by Google

but, perhaps, the more agreeable one, is the London hotel, in the Nevsky Perspective, which is the Bond Street of St. Petersburg. The locality of the Hotel de l'Europe, near the Stone Theatre, is, also, by no means unpleasant, although it is not equally convenient, as being less central. At all the hotels, apartments are to be hired, without the tenant being expected to board in the house.

The only hotel I was myself in the habit of frequenting, was Page's, and which much resembles a boarding-house in the United States of America, being intermediate to a house of that description and an inn. Here you may have board and lodging combined; or, if in private apartments, partake of the advantages of an excellent *table d'hôte*, in the English style, at the rate of three francs per head, where an agreeable mixed society, of consuls, officers, merchants, men of genius, travellers, &c. &c. may always be met with. It is singular that the Russian officers, of all ranks, seem to take a particular pleasure in dining here. For board and bed-chamber, the charge is

Digitized by Google

ten roubles per diem; wines, beer, coffee after dinner, &c. are paid for as extras.

The eating-houses and coffee-rooms are not numerous in St. Petersburg, and chiefly found in the neighbourhood of the *Gustinoy-Dvar*, or shops, being frequented by the Russian merchants and tradesmen. Although the accommodations they afford are but indifferent, you will find in constant readiness, or preparation, a great variety of dishes, particularly fish, and this more especially during the fasts, which are numerous with the Russians; but you may, even at these times, order chops, steaks, or other fleshmeat, if you desire it.

Tea-houses are particularly numerous for the accommodation of the native merchants and lower orders, who are remarkably fond of that beverage.

Private lodgings are scarce, and consequently dear.

Next to his personal accommodations, one of the chief points of interest with a stranger, is the facility afforded him of visiting his

Digitized by Google

friends, or the various interesting objects that may call forth his attention. The great extent of this city and the hospitality of its inhabitants, make it desirable that he should avail himself of some conveyance or other.

For this purpose, boats are constantly in readiness, for plying on the river. By land, numerous carriages, named droshkas, which are the hackney coaches of the place, await your orders, the fares of which, barring imposition, are not exorbitant, except that on Sundays and holidays, which are here so numerous as to comprise nearly a third part of the year, you are compelled to pay a considerably increased rate.

Perhaps, on the score of economy, the best way for a stranger is to have his own equipage. A droshka, drawn by one horse, and a coachman included, may be hired at the rate of about five pounds per month; or a carriage, with four horses, for from fifteen to twenty pounds. In effecting an arrangement of this kind, it is necessary to use much circumspection, and to

Digitized by Google

have every point clearly understood, and evidenced by a written agreement. I was present at a dispute on this subject, between an English gentleman and the proprietor of a carriage he had hired, which, through the firmness of the former only, in resisting the imposition, terminated eventually in his favour.

Every convenience is now afforded in this city, for the accommodation of the pedestrian, its streets being kept remarkably clean, and, in most parts, well paved with flagstones. For the introduction of the latter convenience, the inhabitants, it is said, are indebted to the Emperor's visit to England, at least, soon after, or even before, his return, a peremptory order was issued, that each householder should, within a given time, lay flagstones down before his house, for the purpose of forming a foot-way. Such was the consequent requisition, at the time, for the necessary materials, that I am afraid of stating the immense sums which many are reported to have paid for complying with the order.

Another consequence is, that walking in

Digitized by Google

the streets has become fashionable here; even the Emperor himself, not unfrequently, condescends to be thus visible to his people, on which occasions he is particularly affable, especially to the ladies. This has proved no small inducement to them to become pedestrians.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

Police of St. Petersburg—Pervades all societies, in disguise—Anecdote of the master of police—Necessity for caution and circumspection—Anecdote of two English gentlemen—Street regulations—Smoking and whistling interdicted—Lighting the streets—Mendicity—Prison laws and discipline—Visit to the gaol—Fire police—Curious exercise of the firemen—Hints to travellers respecting credulity.

In order to provide for public security and protection, and, at the same time, to guard against the discussion of, and interference with, the measures of government, an active police pervades every quarter of St. Petersburg.

So great is the vigilance and art of these gentlemen, that it is necessary to observe the strictest caution in conversing with strangers, as they, not unfrequently, assume every variety of disguise, in order to detect such persons as may be adverse or obnoxious to the

Digitized by Google

government. I have heard of a gentleman, who having business with the master of police at the early hour of seven in the morning, took the opportunity of making an enquiry respecting the probability of finding him at home, from a peasant-like man whom he met on approaching his house. This person immediately conducted him to the house, which, to the surprise of the gentleman, he entered, *sans ceremonie*, and immediately proceeding to an inner apartment, threw off his peasant's dress, and stood forth the master of police himself; after which, he exhibited a great variety of dresses of the different characters he was in the habit of assuming.

In these various garbs the police frequent all public places. During the reign of the Emperor Paul, it was not unusual for an unfortunate being to be hurried away to the wilds of Siberia, in consequence of a heedless expression. The following ludicrous instance of the zealous feelings of these police gentlemen, and the whimsicallity of the above monarch, is spoken of:—

Two English gentlemen, amusing themselves with an excursion to Lake Ladoga,

Digitized by Google

having ascended a hill that overlooked the Fortress of Schlusselberg, were accosted by a person who approached them with an enquiry as to their business there. Not pleased with the intrusion, they carelessly replied, that they were taking a view of the fortress. Now the word expressing this in the Russian language, as well as in the English, signifies *taking a sketch.* The man immediately declared himself a police officer, and with much mystery, conducted them, under arrest, to St. Petersburg, where they were taken before the governor and the master of police, who gave them to understand, that the affair was so serious as to make it necessary to report it to the Emperor. After consideable suspence, they were placed in separate kabitkas, and driven away, without the least annunciation of the intention of the government with respect to them; the affair, which at first they treated lightly, now began to assume a serious aspect. At length they found that they had arrived at the very fortress, in the neighbourhood of which they had been arrested; Paul having determined, as they were afterwards informed,

Digitized by Google

that they should have an opportunity of inspecting the inside as well as the outer one.

The governor at first treated them civilly, and even ordered tea, but, unfortunately, before it could be served up, having read his orders, instead of participating of the expected refreshments from the hands of a smart footman, two ferocious gaolers were introduced, who immediately conducted them to separate cells, where they were kept for a considerable time, in solitary confinement, on bread and water; and so ignorant were they of their future fate, that when the hour of release arrived, one of them, who was ignorant of the Russian language, knew not whether to hail the opening of his cell as the harbinger of death or liberty.

The police regulations for preserving the public peace, and keeping order in the streets, are very strict, and some of them not a little peculiar: for instance, both the self-pleasing art of *whistling*, as well as indulgence in *smoking*, are interdicted. A friend of mine one day received a check as he was amusing himself in the former way during his walk. How

Digitized by Google

annoying such regulations must be to bakers' boys and Germans,—the former might, in consequence, be compelled to *think*, the latter prevented from doing so.

The following occurrence, witnessed one day in the street by a friend of mine, serves to instance the dread entertained by the lower classes of getting under the power of the police. As he was passing the Isaac bridge, a droshka suddenly stopped before him, when the driver leaped down, and, with every symptom of consternation, took his passenger from off the seat of the vehicle, and laid him on the road; he then hastily remounted his box, and drove away with all possible speed. The passenger had been seized with a fit, when thinking he might die, the affrighted, but prudent, Russian took this method of getting rid of him, in order to avoid the trouble and expence the police would have imposed upon him, had he been found with the dead body.

Nothing, perhaps, has tended more to check the nocturnal disorders and licentiousness of large cites, than the modern custom of lighting the streets by night. During summer, how-

Digitized by Google

ever, this is quite unnecessary in St. Petersburg; at other seasons they are lighted with oil,—gas not having yet been introduced, although its use is in contemplation. An agent of the London Gas Company was treating for a contract of this kind previous to my departure.

Mendicity prevails in St. Petersburg, as well as in all other great cities; and if the doors of your house happen to be open, beggars do not hesitate to assume it as an invitation to walk in. I was once, during the absence of my servant, while reclining on the sofa, addressed in a supplicating tone, in the German language, by a feeble, pitiful voice; on finding that it proceeded from a female, which I ascertained by placing my hand on her arm, in order to avoid misconstruction, had any friend happened to have entered, I lost no time in conducting her, in the gentlest manner, from out the apartment; I did not even allow myself time to ascertain whether she was young and handsome, or the reverse.

I was on another occasion intruded upon in

Digitized by Google

much the same way by a man, who presented me with a paper, the nature of which he, in vain, endeavoured to make me comprehend. Imagining, however, that his real object was to beg, or, perhaps, purloin some of my moveables, I placed my hand upon him, and was proceeding to conduct him in the nearest direction to the door, a measure to which he manifested a remarkable degree of reluctance, endeavouring to make for a different part of the room; when at this juncture my servant returned. It then appeared that the paper in question, was an account that he ought to have taken to a friend of mine; and, moreover, that, on entering the room, he had laid down his hat; so that he was not merely anxious to explain the object of his visit, but, also, to "regain the felt."

The penal laws are excellently administered in this city, and their code of prison discipline equal, if not superior, to any in Europe.

One great object of the legislature is to find occupation for the prisoners, and, in order to encourage industry, the whole of their earnings are appropriated either for their private

Digitized by Google

use or public comfort. The reformation which the present regulations have introduced is truly gratifying, for when the system of working was first commenced, the greatest difficulty was found in compelling the prisoners to conformity, whereas now, the only difficulty is to find work adequate to their wishes, so eager have they become for employment. In short, they are not only restricted from idle and depraved habits during their confinement, but many of them have acquired principles of industry and honesty, so that after their release, they have commenced business, with the assistance of their reserved gaol savings, and become valuable members of society.*

A visit which I made to the principal prison afforded me excessive interest. We were first ushered into a room occupied, gratuitously, by an English bookbinder, for the purpose of employing a number of the prisoners in this occupation, for which, besides instructing them in his trade, he pays some of them twenty-five roubles each per month, as a remu-

* For a translation of the prison regulations, and other interesting documents, see Appendix D.

Digitized by Google

neration for their services. This person was from home, but his brother obligingly accompanied us over the prison. We were next shewn into the committee-room, where some of the prisoners were engaged in the manufacture of pocket-books, and other fancy works, under the instruction of a German; after this we were taken to a cell on the ground floor, where the more depraved prisoners are confined in irons, with a guard of soldiers to controul them. From hence we passed into the receiving-room, where the work of the prisoners is displayed; whilst we were here, five culprits were brought in, chained, and taken to their cells, without a word escaping from their lips.

The persons confined for debt, are kept separate from the criminals, and as their creditors are obliged to allow them a rouble per day for their support, with the addition of donations, they live extremely well; they are not compelled to work, although most of them do so voluntarily.

I afterwards made a second visit to the same prison, and was taken into the female department, where about twenty women, dressed in

Digitized by Google

the prison uniform, were employed in various kinds of needle-work. I was informed, that they looked extremely clean and neat, and that their apartments were sweet and well regulated. We were, also, conducted through the hospital, which contained only two patients; and over the school, in which about twenty young vagabonds were occupied in learning their appointed tasks. In short, throughout the whole of this establishment, the best order and internal arrangement appear to prevail.

Among other regulations for the management of this city, those intended for its protection from fire, seem particularly deserving of notice.

With a view of affording the most immediate and effectual assistance, the city is divided into twelve quarters, in each of which is a lofty tower, where watchmen are stationed night and day, to detect the first symptom of fire, which is then notified to the whole, by a signal indicative of the quarter in which it has taken place; this signal is made by a flag in the day-time, and by means of lanterns at

Digitized by Google

night, and is immediately repeated by all the other quarters.

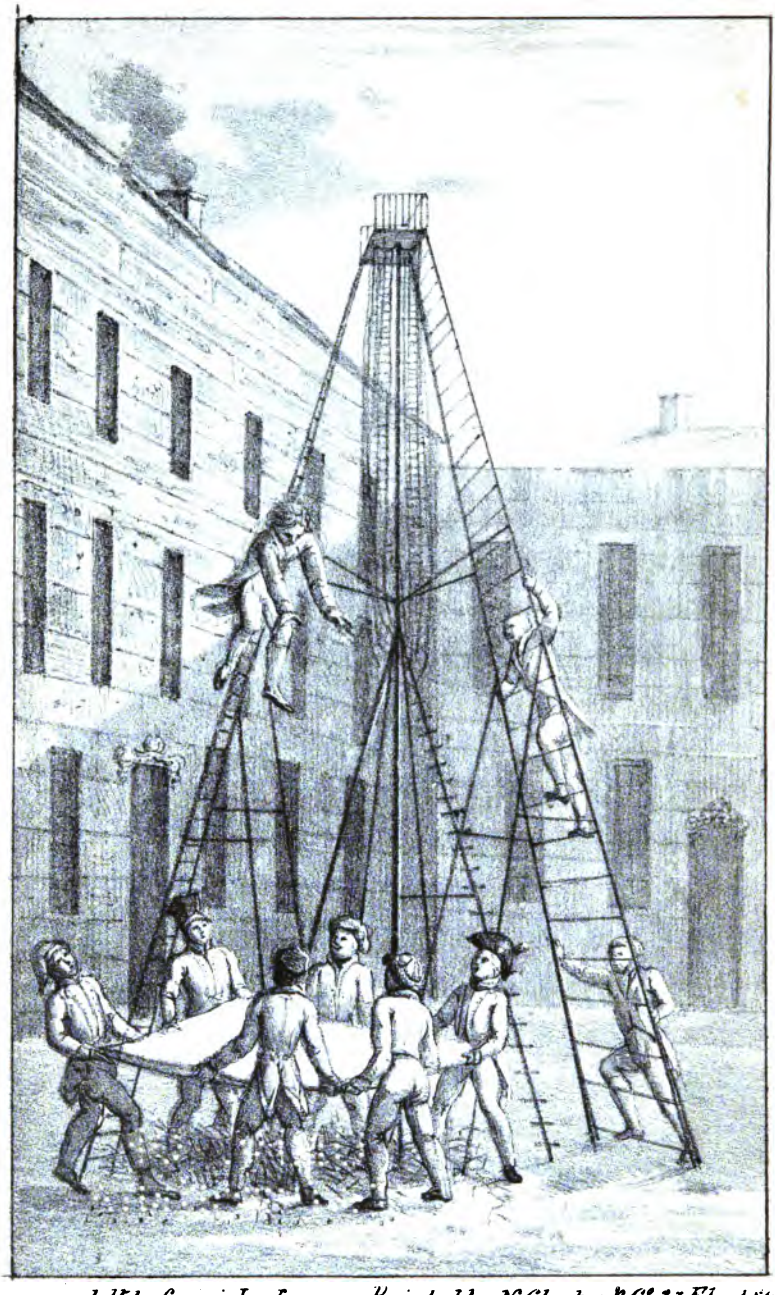
At every station, engines with excellent horses ready harnessed, are prepared to hasten, at a moment's notice, to the point of alarm; and, in order to ensure the greatest promptitude, the firemen are punishable if they do not reach the spot within twenty minutes, however distant its situation may be.

In order to render the firemen more expert in their assistance to the unfortunate inmates of the burning house, they are regularly trained in a very singular exercise. A lofty pole, with a platform near its top, is erected at the height of about the fourth floor of a large house, and ascended by means of ladders: the firemen are practised in descending from this platform with the assistance of plain ropes and rope ladders. The most singular part of the exercise, is, that they are required to precipitate themselves from the platform; every precaution, however, being taken to prevent injury, as by placing beneath a sail-cloth suspended by

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google



. del.t by Gauci, Jun.r Printed by N. Chater & C.o 33 Fleet St.

Vol. 1. Page 128.

Digitized by Google

poles, with feather-beds, hay, straw, and soft substances under it. Even the officers themselves are not exempt from this exercise.

Having casually heard of the existence of the above extraordinary practice, I determined to ascertain the correctness of the information; and at length, after much inquiry, obtained a full confirmation from the firemen themselves. I did not, however, rest here; for I personally visited the scene of exercise, accompanied by a friend, who obligingly made me a sketch of the apparatus employed, and which accompanies this description.

I dwell the more upon this point, as many of my friends had previously ridiculed the affair, as an imposition on my credulity; and, therefore, I derived no little gratification from triumphing, as it were, over their doubts. Before dismissing the subject, I beg leave to obtrude a hint for the use of my travelling brethren—to hear every thing, but believe nothing, without proof or probability;—at all events, not to be over fond of detailing as fact, every inconsistent story they may chance to stumble upon, without first examining into

Digitized by Google

its authenticity: if they meet with obstruction in searching out the truth, this ought only to stimulate them to greater exertions in the pursuit of it. Travellers are, perhaps, more frequently the subjects, than the sources, of imposition, since the great eagerness they evince for novelty, excites the inclination to deceive them. It is said, that when Dr. Clarke was at Petersburg, there were persons who, perceiving his anxiety to obtain information, and his eagerness to note down every thing he heard, used to seek his society, for the express purpose of "*cramming*" him; and I am convinced that, had I allowed myself to have credited all the wonderful stories detailed to me, my book would have teemed with histories not unworthy of Baron Munchausen himself.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

Classes of society and mode of living at St. Petersburg.

ST. PETERSBURG, comprising a population drawn from almost every quarter and nation of the world, may be regarded as a city of strangers; so that it will be difficult to derive from it any thing like a correct picture of the manners and customs of the Russian nation at large, as these must be necessarily, more or less, influenced by the national peculiarities of the motley tribes of foreigners it contains.

It is with a full impression of the difficulty of doing justice to the various modifications of character which are from this source produced, that I enter, with much diffidence, on the present chapter, which professes to treat of the manners, customs, and mode of living of its inhabitants.

Digitized by Google

As this city is the seat of government, it is natural to suppose that the nobility will, in great measure, take their tone from that of the court; I shall, therefore, first make a few observations relative to the latter, which, it will be observed, does not materially differ in its usages from those of other capitals of Europe.

His imperial majesty lives in a simple, unaffected manner, breakfasting at an early hour, after which his mornings, from seven till ten o'clock, are occupied with the ministers and other official persons. The business of the court concluded, he proceeds to the parade, or takes exercise, until two or three o'clock, when he dines. About seven, tea is introduced, after which he either attends some private theatrical performance in the palace, or amuses himself with a ball, concert, or select evening party. Between ten and eleven supper is announced, immediately after which he retires for the night.

The nobility live generally in a similar way to the emperor, excepting that they do not all dine at so early an hour.

Digitized by Google

The Russian merchants are very irregular in their habits, as their families seldom assemble together at the respective meals, unless it happen to be at the supper-table. They have few ideas of the comforts, which almost every class of society in England enjoy, in daily sitting down to the social meal. The mind of the Russian merchant is too absorbed in business to think of domestic comfort, and he is contented if he satisfies the wants of nature, no matter when or where; and so long as his food has a strong flavour, it scarcely signifies what its composition or qualities may be. One of his more common dinners is sour cabbage-soup, named stchee, and which, with some of the meat it is prepared from, he generally partakes of in his kitchen. In times of fasting, instead of meat, fish or grain are used in the preparation of this soup. In short, his mode of living is very little superior to that of a common mechanic, except that he wears better clothes, and possesses some other luxuries, which are out of the latter's reach.

Occasionally, however, the Russian merchant gives a feast, when he launches into the

Digitized by Google

most extravagant and luxurious expences, even so as to vie with the richest nobility.

The lower classes of tradesmen, mechanics, and labourers, live in a manner very similar to the merchant. The labourer's wages are, however, only from five-pence to ten-pence per day; so that he is obliged to live upon black bread, that costs somewhat less than a halfpenny per pound, and of which he will eat three pounds a day; and although he rarely indulges in more than the additional luxury of an onion, yet he seldom fails to take his glass of brandy before he commences his meal.

The Germans are more numerous than any other class of foreigners in this city, being computed at not less than twenty thousand, comprising merchants, tradesmen, and mechanics. They chiefly follow the customs of their own country, associating principally among themselves. Some of them, however, mix much with the English, and assimilate more or less with their habits.

The English residents are about three thousand, who carry forward the various occupa-

Digitized by Google

tions of merchants, tradesmen, &c. These, as usual, keep pretty closely to the manners and customs of their native land.

St. Petersburg abounds with all the necessaries, and most of the luxuries, of life. Amongst its greatest delicacies may be named fresh caveare, the excellence of which cannot be appreciated by those who have only partaken of the salted article which is met with in England under that name. As soon as winter sets in, large quantities are brought into St. Petersburg and Moscow, principally from Astrachan. The Russians have, however, various other delicacies, as the nevaga, a small fish, cod, and rein-deer's tongues, from Archangel; hares, an article of food to which the Russian himself is by no means partial, as well as some others that are prohibited by the Mosaic law; two kinds of partridges; woodcocks; the common and double snipe; the latter of which, in season, is literally fat as butter, and this of the sweetest kind, combined with the most delicious game flavour. Oysters are considered among the rarest luxu-

Digitized by Google

ries of the place, being only found native on the coasts of the Black Sea, whence, in consequence of the distance, they cannot be procured except in the winter season; quantities are, however, imported from Germany, Holland, and England, but seldom very fresh; they are, notwithstanding, so precious as to go down here in the most offensive state, even with an Englishman, so keen does the appetite become from previous abstinence; the price fluctuates from one to four pounds sterling per hundred; so that, with porter, you may readily dispose of a sovereign for your luncheon.

There are, perhaps, few cities better supplied with fruits and vegetables than St. Petersburg and Moscow. The climate, however, does not admit of many fruits coming to perfection in the open air; the chief of these are of exotic origin, and necessarily fostered in the warmth of the hot-house. Many of the choice ones, however, are brought from more genial climes; for instance, grapes from Astrachan, and apples from the Crimea. Their

Digitized by Google

woods abound with nuts, and various berries of exquisite flavour; and in particular the moroshke, in appearance intermediate to the raspberry and mulberry. Its taste is agreeably subacid; it contains, however, numerous large and hard seeds, which diminish the pleasure of eating it. These berries are either eaten in their natural state, or preserved with sugar, or occasionally in water, like cranberries. I have been informed that they are sometimes met with in the Highlands of Scotland. The berry of the mountain-ash is also made use of in Russia to flavour jellies, wine, brandy, and other articles, to which it imparts a most agreeable bitter flavour.

The fruiterers have a variety of modes of preserving their fruits. The apples, either whole or cut into small pieces, are preserved in casks with qvass, sweetened with honey or sugar, and in such forms are sold in the streets at all seasons. Other fruits are mixed and compounded in a variety of ways. Oranges in abundance are imported from the Mediterranean, and in the autumn vast quantities of

Digitized by Google

apples and potatoes are brought in from Germany.

Early in the spring plentiful supplies of vegetables are brought forward, asparagus and morells taking the lead. These supplies not only continue throughout the summer, but almost every kind may be had during the winter, a stock being laid up in dry cellars preparatory to the frosts setting in, the temperature of which is then regularly kept a little above freezing point. Some are hung up around the walls of the cellar; others, particularly the various roots, celery, &c. are laid up in dry sand or mould. But the most indispensable article with the Russian is the cucumber, of which immense quantities are preserved in casks of brine.

Among the more common articles of food used by the nobility, particularly during their fasts, may be named the mushroom, or fungi, of which a great number of genera and species are eaten. They have various modes of preserving them, the more common one being to dry them in a gentle heat; and also

Digitized by Google

as many ways of preparing them for the table.

The following are a few only of the fungi used as articles of food in this country:—

Agaricus campestris.
——— tormentosus.
——— involutus.
——— lactifluus piperatus.
——— lactifluus ruber.
——— lactifluus deliciosus.
——— russula esculenta.
——— candicinus.
——— rosaceus.
Boletus edulis reticulatus.
——— edulis non reticulatus autumnalis.
——— scaber.
——— aurantius.
——— annulatus.
——— piperatus.
——— castaneus.
Rundi morchel, } Morells.
Spitz morchel, }
Clavaria pyxidata.
Hydnum imbricatum, &c. &c.

Digitized by Google

The quantity and variety of vegetable oils made use of would astonish a stranger; the most delicate is that expressed from the seeds of the sun-flower, and prepared by enclosing them in bags and steeping in warm water, after which the oil is expressed; this is actually as sweet as butter. Linseed and nut oils are more commonly used by the lower classes. A very fine oil is also prepared from mustard seed; and large quantities of olive oil are imported for the use of the nobility.

During fast times, the pastry and *pâtés* given you with the soup, are prepared with oil instead of butter, and I have occasionally found them rancid.

A variety of articles, accommodated to the taste of the lower orders, are, as in other great cities, vended in the open streets; the following, however, may be considered as peculiar to St. Petersburg,—a kind of buck-wheat cake, which, when the purchaser receives his portion, is feathered with common oil, by way of sauce; peas-pudding cut into slices, and vended in the same relishing manner;

Digitized by Google

fish pies, with crust round the edges, and oil poured over the fish; the offal parts of animal food; hard boiled eggs; boiled potatoes, &c.

A variety of drinks are also carried about with the same intention; as the Zboten, prepared from honey, or treacle and water, with herbs added to give it a flavour; this, when cold, is carried about in glass vessels, and, when hot, in metal ones. Occasionally a better kind of Zboten is prepared from the juice of cranberries, pears, prunes, or other fruits, sweetened with honey. Another beverage, is the Kvass, which is brewed with rye-flower, and sometimes flavoured with aromatic herbs, and which is carried in the preparation to a slight acetous fermentation; this may be considered the substitute for English small-beer. There is, however, a superior Kvass, named Buza, prepared from sifted flower and malt; and a third, named Kisloy-stchee, from the finest wheat-flower, and which is deliciously effervescent. Mead is also much used. Independent of the above beverages, there are, in this city,

Digitized by Google

large breweries of superior ale and porter, such as would not be despised in England. The principal brewer is Mr. A. Cazelet.

Tea, ready prepared, is, also, constantly selling in the streets, particularly in cold weather.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

Religion of the Russians—Baptismal ceremony—Marriage ceremony—Funerals—Visits to the tombs of deceased relatives—The blessing of the waters.

No country in the world is more tolerant with respect to religious opinions than Russia, for although it adopts the doctrines of the Greek church, which in many points resemble those of Rome, yet it permits the free exercise of every other form and creed.

The Greek differs chiefly from the Roman catholic church in denying the supremacy of the pope, the emperor being at its head, and the ecclesiastical government, under him, vested in a metropolitan, archbishops, and bishops. Its constitution combines in it an immensity of superstition, and, although it disclaims the worship of images, admits the mediation of saints, with pictures of whom

Digitized by Google

the churches abound; it observes also a great number of fasts, encourages monasteries, and prescribes celibacy amongst the higher orders of its priests, although the parish priests are permitted to marry once.

I believe it maintains many peculiar views with respect to the sacraments and nature of the Divine essence, which I shall not pretend to discuss, but confine myself to a description of some of the more common ceremonies which I had opportunities of witnessing.

The baptismal ceremony always takes place in a few days after birth, and consists of a complete immersion in water, accompanied by various rites. The water used, being first consecrated, is placed in a sufficiently capacious vessel in the middle of the room where the ceremony is performed, and then encircled by the company. The priest, now receiving the child in his arms, after a preliminary prayer, enquires its sex from the sponsors, and then proceeds to place around its neck a consecrated cross, attached to a gold chain, or riband, according to the circumstances of its parents.

Digitized by Google

A small portion of hair is then, at three several times, taken by the clerical assistant from the head of the child, kneaded up with a portion of wax, and given to the godfather or godmother, as the sex may happen to be, who places it upon the surface of the water; if it swims this is regarded as a propitious omen; on the contrary, its falling to the bottom is an indication of the child's premature departure from this sublunary scene; either of which results might at pleasure be determined by the peculiar form given to the wax.

The priest next enquires the name, and as it is announced plunges the infant into the water; after which it is placed in a wrapper, and according to its sex, given to the male or female sponsor, who then carries it three times around the vessel, preceded by the priest offering up prayers and followed by the other sponsors. After this the child is committed to the care of the nurse. The priest now directs the sponsors to turn their backs towards him, and spit three times on the ground, with the view of ejecting the evil spirit. The ceremony,

Digitized by Google

if performed in private, concludes by presenting refreshments to the company.

One singular circumstance remains to be noticed, which is, that such persons as have officiated together as sponsors are, by the Greek church, afterwards interdicted from intermarrying.

I had the gratification, by particular favour, of being present at the reception into Christianity of the Princess Olga, or Olivia, daughter of the Grand-Duke Nicholas, which was celebrated in the chapel of the beautiful Tauride palace, the dowager empress personally officiating as godmother. The ceremony was substantially as above described; but as all the splendour of the church and court were displayed on the occasion, the effect was, of course, most imposing. Her imperial majesty, who was magnificently attired, I am assured, went through her part of the ceremony with wonderful grace and dignity.

Marriage is, perhaps more in Russia than in any other country, a contract of convenience, rather than an engagement of the

Digitized by Google

heart. This is, however, an observation more particularly illustrated amongst the lower classes; for instance, if the mother of a family, from age, or any other cause, becomes incapable of attending to her domestic occapations, an enquiry is set on foot to find out a stout, healthy young woman, able to undertake the charge, to whom one of the sons, although only a child, is immediately married.

A friend of mine once witnessed the ludicrous circumstance of a stout young woman, of twenty-seven, carrying off, in her arms, her husband, a boy of eight years, who had been amusing himself at babki, a game played with sheep's bones.

Marriage is often brought about by the intervention of friends, without reference to the inclinations of the parties; nay, occasionally, without their having previously seen each other.

The peculiarities of the marriage ceremony in Russia have long been notorious. Many, however, of the more singular and barbarous customs, which formerly prevailed, have given way under the light of civilization, although

Digitized by Google

enough yet remains to interest, and occasionally disgust, the traveller.

I was fortunate enough to have been present at the different ceremonies observed in the families of two wealthy merchants, which I shall take the opportunity of describing; I shall, however, previously introduce an account of another, which I have been favoured with by a friend, as illustrating some points, chiefly preliminary, which did not come under my own immediate observation.

My friend, who was particularly intimate with a part of the bride's family, had accompanied them one day to pay a visit of congratulation to a relative of the family of the bridegroom. On their return, she could not avoid noticing a whisper amongst the party, which she afterwards found to have arisen from a suggestion thrown out by the lady they had been visiting, of the eligibility of a matrimonial connexion between her nephew and a young lady of their family. The proposal was well relished, and nothing remained but to open the affair with the parties themselves, who

Digitized by Google

were at this time wholly unacquainted with the subject on the *tapis*. A series of visits were arranged for this purpose, and the bait was readily taken on both sides; and, on the fourth visit, the gentleman made his declaration in form, and was freely accepted, on the lady being assured that it was a desirable connexion. In a day or two after, accompanied by his intended bride and his sister, and taking an image with them, they presented themselves before his mother, and received her benediction.

From this time all was bustle and confusion. Milliners, dress-makers, and every other kind of work-people, were put into immediate requisition, to prepare the bride's wardrobe; a matter of no small import, as she was to be provided with twelve dozen of every article of personal and household linen. The bridegroom is also to be presented with twelve dozen of shirts and handkerchiefs.

This custom of making bridal presents is certainly not peculiar to the Russians; but, perhaps, there is no part of the world where it is carried to a greater extent. Amongst the

Digitized by Google

rich nobility, immense sums are often thus expended. When the Countess Strogonoff married Prince Galitzin, about two years since, the picture-gallery of her father's palace is said to have been crowded with articles furnished on the occasion, so as to have resembled a bazaar. Amongst others, were immense numbers of the richest shawls, a silver dressing-table, basin, and ewer, with a profusion of perfumeries and other *materiel* for the toilet; and of shoes alone, there were no less than five hundred pairs—the whole reputed to have cost half a million of roubles.

I may here take the opportunity of remarking, that marriage in Russia gives the husband no controul over his wife's property: at her death, she can dispose of it as she pleases. Nor does this merely affect her own inheritance; her husband can thus vest in her any part, or the whole, of his own property, and cheat his creditors with impunity.

To return to my friend's narrative. On the day before the wedding, the whole of these paraphernalia were submitted to public view, and most minutely inspected by the

Digitized by Google

visitors, the price of each article being closely inquired into. A cold collation was laid out on the occasion, for those who chose to partake of it.

At length the happy day arrived: the bride's party dined *en famille*, after which she retired to her chamber. Her hair was first dressed, and then her younger relatives began to attire her in the marriage-garments. When this was half completed, two of her brothers were separately introduced, to put on her stockings and shoes, each drawing on one, of course only over the ancle, and so far as to admit the shoe upon the foot; and as each article of dress was put on, she made the sign of the cross. When completed, her dress was simply elegant, consisting of white satin, trimmed with rich blonde lace, every part being new. On her head was a coronet of diamonds, with a *bouquet* of pearls, secured with diamond pins; she also wore a diamond necklace and ear-rings.

The whole party, comprising the nearest relatives of the happy couple, now proceeded to the private chapel of the bridegroom's relatives,

Digitized by Google

where the nuptial ceremony was performed. This concluded, they retired to the residence of the bridegroom, where an elegant supper was provided, to which, however, none but relatives, and no unmarried females, were admitted. At the conclusion of this repast, the bride was conducted to her chamber by her female friends, who assisted in substituting an elegant *robe de chambre* for her wedding-garments, her diamond head-dress being replaced by a beautiful cap of Mecklenburg lace, trimmed with pink satin riband. The bridegroom and his friends were now permitted to enter, and the health of the new married pair was drank in champaigne. All now retired again, with the exception of the ladies, who remained to put the bride to bed; after which the whole party returned to their respective homes.

The wedding which I had the opportunity of personally witnessing, had also been made up between the friends of the parties, the first proposal coming from those of the bridegroom, and being deemed too good an offer to be refused, the young lady, as yet only

Digitized by Google

fourteen years of age, was hurried from school, in order to consummate the union.

Previous to the nuptials, however, a series of entertainments were, according to custom after betrothing, given by the friends of the bride, and which, after the marriage, were returned by those of the bridegroom.

Our first visit was, therefore, to the father of the bride, who was one of the modern, refined Russian merchants; that is, he did not wear a beard, and knew how to converse in French. On entering the room, he received us with a kiss on each cheek, welcoming us in the most polite and cordial manner, and thanking us for the honour we had done him. He then conducted us to an inner apartment, and, with his own hand, presented each of us with a glass of champaigne. A crowd of servants now encircled us, offering a variety of refreshments, as chocolate, or tea, succeeded by punch, sweetmeats, fruits, and wines.

After this we mixed with the company, some joining in the dance, others reconnoitring the various apartments, or participating in whatever amusement was most congenial with their taste.

Digitized by Google

The various rooms were all most elegantly furnished and decorated; one, however, deserves particular notice: in its centre, was a large table covered with linen to the floor, but festooned around, and decorated with flowers; its surface was crowded with the choicest fruits, and ornamented with temples, pyramids, and festoons of flowers, the whole brilliantly illuminated with lustres. At the further end of this table, was a sofa placed under a canopy, for the occasional retirement of the bride and bridegroom, the former a plump little girl, quite native in her manners, although not very lively; her dress was most splendid, her head decorated with a diamond tiara; and she, also, wore a rich necklace of the same precious gem. The sofa, however, was so placed as scarcely to leave them visible, unless you approach with the express intention of seeing them, a proceeding by no means deemed an intrusion.

On this sofa the happy pair freely indulged in a variety of amorous toyings; in short, it is regarded a necessary part of the ceremony to afford the company, in this way, repeated indications of happiness; and although, from their

Digitized by Google

position behind the table, their persons might not be actually visible, the loud kisses which passed between them were sufficiently audible.

After dancing had continued for some time, a man in the attire of a peasant was introduced, who sung a variety of national songs, in a pleasing manner. These songs produced a very ludicrous effect on one of the company, a bearded gentleman, said to be a tutor, and who appeared to be well-lined with punch; this man was so delighted, that he kept stroking and kissing the beard of the singer alternately for some time after he had concluded. The dancing was now resumed, and kept up until four o'clock, when it terminated with a *polonaise;* after which the company sat down to a most sumptuous supper, comprising every delicacy of the season, and a variety of excellent wines.

During the supper, a long series of toasts were given, at the announcement of each of which a herald exclaimed, "*touche,*" when a flourish of trumpets took place, and the band struck up a lively air; each toast was accompanied by three cheers, and

Digitized by Google

on the occasion of our host's health being drank, we threw our glasses over our heads upon the ground, which was regarded as a most distinguished honour paid to him; after this, the foreign visitors chaired both him and the bridegroom, and carried them around the table.

Toward seven in the morning, the entertainment concluded by the English part of the company dancing a Scotch reel, to the no small delight of the natives. We then saluted the bride again and again, and took leave of our spirited host, who gave us many embraces, and a pressing invitation to his next party.

From the above specimens of a Russian merchant's festival, an inference will necessarily be drawn of his great wealth, in which respect some of these people, in their entertainments, vie with the richest of the nobility. They are, however, notwithstanding, looked upon by the latter as an inferior race of beings, with whom it would be a degradation to associate. It is their wealth only which gives them consequence; and as most of them have originally been slaves, and brought up in the grossest

Digitized by Google

ignorance, it is not surprising that few motives of honour or morality should interfere with their means of acquiring money. In cunning and the art of over-reaching, they yield not to the Chinese themselves, but such is the deficiency of their education, that few of them are able to transact business by the most common rules of arithmetic; for this purpose they make use of an instrument named the stchot, very analogous in its principle with the Chinese swan-pan, from which it has probably been derived.* These deficiencies are, however, the results of a neglected education, not of a want of natural genius; for some have succeeded in breaking through the trammels of opposing circumstances, and attained eminence in the arts and sciences of their country. The celebrated architect of the Cazan church was of this class, and originally a slave to Count Stroganoff.

What tends much to prevent the advancement of this important class of the Russian nation is, that whatever riches they may ac-

* For an account of the stchot, see Appendix E.

Digitized by Google

quire, the law precludes them from becoming landed proprietors; they are allowed, however, to purchase and build houses, the consequence of which is that a large part of St. Petersburg belongs to them. More pains, is also taking of their education, and it is to be expected that the prejudices and restrictions with regard to them will eventually be removed. In short, they may already be occasionally seen in the society of people of rank. Such is the all-powerful influence of gold,

> "———— This yellow slave
> Will make black, white; foul, fair; base, noble;
> And give them title, knee, and approbation
> With senators on the bench."

The marriages of the Russians are generally celebrated on a Sunday, and always in the evening. This was the case in the present instance. At the end of a fortnight after the above entertainment, the marriage was solemnized in the Cazan church; on which occasion, I had the satisfaction of being present. Previous to setting out to church, the bride and bridegroom presented themselves on their knees before their respective parents, en-

Digitized by Google

treating their forgiveness of past offences and imploring blessings on their future prospects. In token of acquiescence, the parents gave them an image, accompanying it with many tears and embraces. Immediately after this ceremony, the party set out for the church, but, what is strange, the parents themselves are forbidden to be present, although among the higher ranks the priests occasionally concede this point.

On entering the church, which on the present occasion was crowded by numbers whom curiosity had attracted to witness the ceremony, the parties being in high consideration, the bride and bridegroom were conducted to a temporary altar erected in the middle of it; opposite to them were ranged the priest and the friends of the parties. The bridegroom, with the bride, stood upon a rich carpet, their attendants, or the groomsmen, as they are called in England, being placed behind them.

The priest, having presented them with a lighted wax-taper, which they received with all possible respect, at the same time kissing his hand, now commenced the prayers

Digitized by Google

appropriated for the occasion, in which they concurred, by occasionally making the sign of the cross. Two crowns, a larger and smaller one, were now brought forward, which, after being consecrated, were presented by the priest, the larger one to the bridegroom, the lesser one to the bride, who kissed them, crossing themselves at the same time. The priest now gave these crowns to the attendants, who held them over the heads of the respective parties. The whole then made, three times, a circuit of the altar, preceded by the priest, the groomsmen still holding the crowns over the heads of the bride and bridegroom. The priest now consecrated two rings, after which he presented one to the bride, and the other to the bridegroom, who respectively kissed, and returned them to him, when he placed one on the finger of the bridegroom, and united their hands. The husband then placed the other ring on the finger of his wife, and embraced her. Another circuit was made round the temporary altar, from which the wedded pair now retired, approaching the larger altar, which, as in all Greek churches,

Digitized by Google

was surrounded by the pictures of saints; here they made devotional obeisances to their patron ones; after which, on retiring therefrom, the whole company began to offer their congratulations.

The ceremony being thus concluded, the party returned to the house of the bride's father, where a splendid entertainment was given to a select party, previous to the wedded pair retiring to the nuptial bed.

On the following evening, I attended the wedding ball, at the residence of the bridegroom's father; the amusements of which were very similar to what I had previously participated in at the bride's father's, only, as the house was larger, it admitted of things being effected on a more extensive scale. In addition, the bride's chamber was to be seen, in which the various presents of plate, china, &c. were ranged in order around the room.

The dance was kept up with great spirit until nearly five o'clock, when to the disappointment of many, instead of sitting down to a splendid supper, the party broke up; in fact,

Digitized by Google

dinner had not concluded before twelve o'clock, and therefore a supper was thought superfluous; there was, however, an abundance of every kind of refreshment, wines, &c. &c.

Among the higher classes in this country, no ceremony is more imposing than that solemn one which drops the curtain upon all sublunary scenes, when the mute subject lies unconscious of the tokens of respect paid him by his surviving relatives. For some days after death, the body is exposed in state in the chief apartment of the house, surrounded by all the paraphernalia adapted for the occasion. A train of servants, in deep mourning, usher you through suites of apartments hung with funeral livery, and lighted by wax candles. At length you reach the apartment where the body lies, extended on the state bed, in a splendid coffin, covered with crimson velvet; the escutcheon placed at the foot, and a superbly decorated canopy at the head of the bed; the whole bed, as well as various parts of the walls of the room, which are hung with black drapery, are illuminated with immense

Digitized by Google

wax flambeaux, while a number of priests are in attendance who offer up constant prayers for the soul of the deceased.

The corpse itself is attired in its best clothing; or in an expensive substitute for it; or if the individual held any situation under government, in his appropriate uniform. This custom led to a singular occurrence on the decease of the late General Alabief. After his interment, a bill of thirty thousand roubles was missing; suspicion fell upon his secretary, who was threatened with a prosecution, unless it was reproduced. Unable to account for the deficiency, the idea at length occurred to him, that the paper might have been buried with his master; the coffin was opened and the bill found safe in the general's pocket!

On the day of the funeral, the streets through which it passes are strewed with cypress leaves. The coffin with its lid on, but as yet unsecured, is placed on a rich car, with the canopy before mentioned over it, supported by six wooden pillars, and carried by men in deep mourning. The procession now marches slowly towards the

Digitized by Google

church, preceded by numerous choristers, who chant, as it advances, the most affecting and solemn dirges. Succeeding to these come an immense number of priests, attired in their clerical robes. Behind the car, the relatives of the deceased follow, with their heads uncovered; such as are military men, in full uniform; or if they hold situations at court, in their richest court-dresses. Ladies frequently join in the procession, some on foot, others in carriages; and the carriages of the relatives bring up the rear.

Having entered the church, the coffin is placed on a bier, with the canopy over it; the lid is removed, and the relatives and attendants take their stations on each side. The prayers now commence, accompanied by the most solemn vocal and instrumental music; this part of the ceremony continuing for not less than two hours. At its conclusion, the father confessor of the deceased reads aloud the contents of a scroll of paper, consisting of a pardon for his sins, and which is then, together with a piece of money, placed in the hand of the departed Christian. These may

Digitized by Google

be considered as his passports into the other world.*

The mourners and other attendants now, one by one, take their final leave of their departed relative and friend, by embracing his corpse; the lid is then secured, and the coffin once more placed on the car, for the purpose of being conveyed to its last earthly habitation—the family vault. The company now enter their carriages, and return to the house of the deceased, where a splendid entertainment is provided for them.

It will readily be conceived that the expences attending such a funeral must be very considerable. In the instance of Prince Plata-Zauboff, who was lately buried at the Strelna Monastery, they are said to have amounted to nearly a hundred thousand roubles; and the canopy used at the death of Madame Narishkin alone cost six thousand roubles.

It is customary in Russia, on the anniversaries of the death of any respected relative,

* See Appendix F.

Digitized by Google

to make a solemn visit to his tomb. The following account of the honours paid in this way by his present imperial majesty, to the *manes* of his father, Paul, at the church of the fortress, was communicated to me by a friend.

As the imperial family approached the place of sepulture, its was met by the metropolitan and heads of the clergy, accompanied by the governor of the city. The procession then entered the church in the following order:—

First came the clergy, in their respective orders and full canonicals; after them followed the emperor, in military uniform, with the two empresses, one on each side of him, both being in deep mourning and covered by black veils; next came the Grand Duke Nicholas, leading his duchess, and then the Grand Duke Michael, accompanied by the governor. The whole stationed themselves near the tomb, without the railing. The dowager empress was now conducted by the emperor within the enclosure of the tomb, where she continued for a considerable time, in the act

Digitized by Google

of prayer, and in frequent apparent agitation, his majesty having, during this time, returned to his former station.

Her majesty's devotions having concluded, the emperor, with all the other members of the imperial family, one by one in succession, according to their rank, approached, and, on their knees, impressed three distinct kisses, first on the tomb, and then on the pavement, crossing themselves at the commencement and termination of this their participation in the ceremony. The emperor now conducted his mother from out of the chapel; after which the party returned to the winter palace. It ought to be added, that the whole of this impressive ceremony was accompanied by the most affecting vocal music.

There is, however, one day of the year more particularly held sacred to the memory of the dead, the 22d of October, (O. S.) when most of the lower orders repair to the churches and burial grounds, taking with them a quantity of rice, baked with honey, for the purpose of having it blessed by the priests, after which they return home to eat it, pro-

Digitized by Google

nouncing at the time the names of their departed friends, and taking care to comfort themselves with no small quantity of brandy.

When the death of any rich person is expected, it is by no means uncommon for an undertaker to bribe the servants to admit him to some private room of the house, in order that he may be the first to measure the corpse for the coffin, and thus secure the funeral arrangements. Whatever property falls in the way of the servants, is regarded by them as fair plunder, provided they have the address to steal it undetected.

As soon as a person dies, his effects are placed under the seal of proper authorities, the dilatoriness of whose proceedings in its distribution is such, that the relatives make it a rule to possess themselves of all the moveables they can, before announcing the event.

I shall describe one more religious ceremony, named the "Blessing of the Waters," and which is observed annually on the morning of the 6th of January, O. S.

On this occasion, after divine service in the chapel of the winter palace, the emperor,

Digitized by Google

accompanied by the various members of the imperial family, the clergy, and different public functionaries, repairs in grand procession to the Neva, where a large and splendid pavilion, decorated with paintings from subjects in holy writ, is erected over an opening cut through the ice.

The order of procession is as follows:— First come the choir, singing appropriate hymns, and followed by the archbishops, bishops, and inferior clergy, the former habited in richly embroidered robes, with their episcopal mitres on their heads, beset with pearls and brilliants, and wearing also the splendid crosses of the orders of St. Alexander Nefsky and St. Vladimir. This whole body of priests, with their long white beards, makes a remarkably venerable appearance. Next in the procession is the emperor, attended by his officers of state, and followed by the grand dukes and a numerous train of the nobility.

On entering the pavilion, the emperor and his court uncover their heads, and, notwithstanding the intense severity of the wea-

Digitized by Google

ther, remain in this state throughout the ceremony. The whole now arrange themselves in their respective situations, and the archbishop proceeds to bestow his benediction on the waters of the river. A cup full is taken from it, with which he in succession sprinkles the emperor, his brothers, and the whole party, each respectfully kissing his hand on receiving the holy fluid.

The procession now returns to the palace, in the same order as before, amidst salutes of cannon from the fortress; after which a splendid breakfast is partaken of.

In Catharine the Second's time the ladies of the court used to join in the ceremony; they now, however, in consequence of the severe cold, merely witness the procession from the windows of the palace.

The crowds which assemble on the occasion are immense; and such is the opinion entertained by all classes, from the palace to the cottage, of the virtues of the blessed water, that thousands of vessels full are taken from the river, to be reserved as a *panacea* against every disorder to which the human body is

Digitized by Google

incidental.* Nay, notwithstanding the rigour of the season, numberless mothers take their infants to be baptized in the river; and I have been informed that, on such occasions, the hands of the officiating priest have sometimes been so benumbed by cold, that the child has been known to slip through his fingers, when the current has immediately, and irretrievably, carried it under the ice. In this case, the mother readily consoles herself in the firm belief, that an infant, thus drowned in holy water, goes the shortest way to heaven.

* A foreign gentleman being seized one day with a fit of the cholic, the lady of the house administered to him a glass of this blessed water, under the full impression that it would immediately cure him: unfortunately, however, it aggravated the complaint, which was attributed to his want of faith. The husband now prescribed a glass of Cogniac, which proved more efficacious on the stomach of the unbeliever.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

The Commerce of Russia.

THE extensive intercourse I had the opportunity of enjoying during my residence in St. Petersburg, with many of its more eminent merchants, induces me to offer a few remarks respecting the commercial relations of Russia with other countries, but more particularly Great Britain.

In the first place, I beg to observe, that, by the prohibitory system, a considerable alteration appears to have lately taken place with regard to those relations. Other causes, have also combined to deteriorate them; even so far back as the time of Catharine the Second, a considerable jealousy began to be evidenced on the part of Russia; the temporary influence which

Digitized by Google

the French attained from the year 1807 to 1812, tended materially to aggravate this unfriendly disposition; and the professed object of the government is, at the present time, to render themselves entirely independent of other countries, by encouraging native manufactories of every description; a line of policy, however, which has been carried into effect with so little judgment, as to have almost universally failed in its execution, notwithstanding many of the measures adopted to promote it have been most decided and energetic; such as assisting individuals with loans of money for stated periods, the absolute prohibition of many foreign manufactures, and the imposition of high duties on others, besides affording many other important advantages intended to encourage the object in view.

The actual result of these measures has been, that the Russian manufacturer, unable to produce the finer articles so cheap as they can be supplied from other countries, and availing himself of the extensive contraband trade, which the government, from their great line of frontier, has not the power to suppress, has

Digitized by Google

attached his mark to foreign goods and vended them as his own. In short, this system of the Russian government has generally terminated in the ruin of the manufacturer, so that eventually the former has been glad to seize upon the remaining property of the latter, in order to reimburse itself for the money that has been advanced.

The above pernicious system is, however, further subversive of the morality of the people, since it holds out to them the strongest inducement to engage in illicit traffic, and which, I am assured, is carried on to an almost incredible extent, principally through the intervention of the Jews. It is also, at the same time, injurious to the revenue, which would, without doubt, be better promoted by a repeal of the prohibitory laws, and the imposition of moderate duties on the various articles of foreign produce.

It can scarcely be imagined, that the government is unaware of the injurious tendency of their measures;—to what then can their persistence in them be attributed? without doubt they are considerably influenced by

Digitized by Google

a spirit of retaliation for the restrictions imposed by the British government on the importation of their linen and sailcloths. They alledge, however, that the diminution of the duties would occasion an excess of the imports over the exports, and thus lead to the ruin of their manufacturers. Specious as this may appear in reason, it is futile in fact, since every one acquainted with Russian commerce knows that, as the affair now stands, the imports, in consequence of the illicit trade, have actually and virtually much exceeded the exports, although the custom-house documents do not make it appear; and this, of course, without the due advantage being derived by the revenue itself.

Would it not be better for Russia, until her population has materially increased to discontinue all manufactures excepting those of her native raw material, the barter of which would, in all probability, be equivalent to the introduction of her necessary foreign commodities and luxuries? since it is by no means probable that the demand for the latter would be greater than the former would be capable of covering. It is an acknowledged axiom, that increased

Digitized by Google

imports will be productive of increased exports, and *vice versa*; for the stream of commerce, like that of water, has a tendency to keep its level; so that you cannot detract from one extremity without producing a determination to it from the other.

As matters now stand, the English merchant is no great gainer by his connexion with Russia; for the obstructions he meets with are innumerable, and certain to do away with any competent profit; he has not merely to contend with prohibitions, excessive duties, and obscure tariffs, but with the necessity of an immense floating capital; a variety of competition; and the bad faith of the Russian merchants.

The liberty of the British merchant has also of late been materially infringed upon. Previous to 1806, he was only amenable to the representative of his nation, whose pass was his protection; this privilege he has been deprived of, and he is now placed on the same footing as the common mechanics of the country, and liable to be dragged before the lowest courts of justice on every trivial occasion. How dif-

Digitized by Google

ferent is this treatment from what our countrymen experienced during the reign of Catharine, and which shed a lustre upon them and their nation.

The Russians, notwithstanding, are under the greatest obligations to the English merchants, by whose capital they may be said to be supported; since if the latter enters into a contract with the former for the sale and delivery of goods at the expiration of six months, he is obliged to pay down half, and sometimes the whole money at the time; whereas, in the reverse case, of a Russian purchasing from an Englishman, although the delivery be immediate, the payment must be long deferred; and yet, at the same time, they will deal with the Americans, for barter or money, or only short credits.

In the reign of Catharine the Second, which may be regarded as the Augustan age of the country, the exchange, between St. Petersburg and London, was as high as forty-eight pence for the rouble, while bank-notes and agio were six per cent on silver, in favour of the bank-note; now, the exchange is under ten

Digitized by Google

pence per rouble, and the agio two hundred and seventy-five per cent. (it has been at three hundred) in favour of silver, or rather against the bank-note. This is attributable to the excess of paper-money arbitrarily issued, and to the impolitic measures of the government.

Russia, undoubtedly, from the vast extent of her territory, and the immense variety of her climate, soil, and productions, possesses within herself all the elements of extensive commerce. When she knows how to avail herself properly of the local advantages nature has so abundantly lavished upon her, she will undoubtedly become a great commercial nation. At present, however, her power, notwithstanding she has the vanity to think otherwise, is more ideal than real; she may, not unaptly, be resembled to a gigantic child, too little advanced from infancy to throw aside external support, without the risk of injuring those principles which are calculated eventually to carry it to manhood.

As to her trade, it is scarcely, at this time, worth the attention of a man of capital; unless he be a Jew, or a smuggler, and well acquainted

Digitized by Google

with every species of chicanery and meanness; even such an one, must be possessed of consummate cunning, and may esteem himself fortunate if he succeeds in carrying his point without the Russian outwitting him.

To conclude—it appears impossible that the emperor can long remain unacquainted with the injurious consequences of this system of high duties and prohibitions, and from his known character, it may be hoped, that he will direct it to be altered; particularly when he sees the effects of our new and liberal system of commerce in producing the extension of our national power, and the welfare of all mankind.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

The Winter at St. Petersburg.

To an English reader, whose situation and habits have led him to experience only a slight difference between the various seasons of the changing year, and particularly to the inhabitants of the more genial and less variable climate of the south, a short description of a winter at St. Petersburg may, possibly, prove interesting: I shall, therefore, endeavour to pourtray the leading features of the one I passed in that city.

The previous summer had proved peculiarly warm, and comparatively finer than usual, so that it was not until the middle of September, that the variability of the weather gave the first intimations of the approach of winter, a season so highly desirable and important to

Digitized by Google

the Russian. We now, indeed, experienced so much variability, that I have one hour basked in the warmest sunshine, and the next been deluged by torrents of rain. Such changes certainly, are not exclusively peculiar to this country; St. Petersburg, however, appears, by nature, more adapted to these transitions than any other city in Europe, in consequence of its situation in the midst of marshes, which afford an abundance of exhalations. The atmosphere, being further surcharged with moisture from the Gulf of Finland on one side, and Lake Ladoga on the other, contributes to make it a repository for the watery elements; it is fortunate, however, that a frequency of high winds assist in carrying away this excessive humidity, by the great evaporation they occasion. Krafft states the average result of several years calculation of the state of the weather here, as follows:—Rain, one hundred and three days; snow, seventy-two; unsettled, ninety-three; clear and serene weather, ninety-seven.

At length, November was ushered in, and with it came all the harbingers of approaching

Digitized by Google

winter. Most of the families who had been enjoying their summer residences had now returned to the city. On the first day of this month, the morning broke forth with a gloomy appearance; the thermometer indicated frost, and at two o'clock it commenced snowing, which continued until midnight. The wind, however, now veered round to S. W. and for some days it became milder again. Many of the vessels in the harbour of Cronstadt prepared to sail with the first fair wind.

On the 6th the wind changed to the north, the weather becoming sensibly colder. We now began to experience a regular clear frost, with occasional interruptions of snow.

On the 13th most of the vessels that remained at Cronstadt sailed; and it was reported that a quantity of ice from Ladoga Lake had entered the Neva; the communication with Cronstadt by steam-boats was, consequently, interrupted; and those who reside on the Island, as it is termed, hesitated to visit the court side of the Neva.

When the river closes, the first symptom is an appearance of sheets of ice floating down

Digitized by Google

it, so thin as scarcely to be discernible; this is termed by the Russians, salo, or tallow. Quantities of ice are now every instant expected down the river, and the proper authorities are on the alert to remove the bridges, on the instant that it becomes necessary. After this, the ice which forms on the border of Lake Ladoga separates, and is driven by the wind into the current of the Neva; the masses here gradually accumulate, and at length combine into one solid body.

On the 15th the thermometer was at seven degrees (Reaumur) below freezing; and before midnight three of the bridges were removed.

On the 17th the weather became milder again, the thermometer rising to two and a half of heat. On the following day, a heavy westerly gale came on, and the water in the river rose to an unusual height. The bridges were now replaced: the season, in short, is so variable at this time, that it is not unusual to remove and replace the bridges three or four times, before the river is permanently closed for the winter. The river now

Digitized by Google

became free from ice, so that the communication with Cronstadt was renewed, and the weather was once more so mild, that the Russians began to apprehend an open winter; to them a most serious occurrence, as it interferes with their supplies of provisions by sledges from the interior, and renders the necessaries of life unusually dear. The expence of transferring all articles of commerce in Russia, is much less in winter than in summer.

On the evening of the 25th a sensible change again took place: snow fell, and the thermometer indicated two degrees of frost. On the 28th we had seven degrees of frost; and, on the following day, large masses of ice floating down the Neva, the bridges were again taken away.

Notwithstanding this strong indication, December came in with a mild aspect, so that, on the 2d, the Isaac Bridge was again replaced. This open weather continued, with little interruption, until the 16th, when the thermometer sunk to three degrees of frost; and, on the following day, one of the bridges

Digitized by Google

was, for the last time, removed. It was remarked, that precisely nine months had now elapsed since the breaking up of the ice of last winter; the longest period in which the river had ever been known to be free. On the 23d of September, (O. S.) 1715, the river was completely frozen over in twenty-four hours, and continued so until the May following; such were the great distinctions of the two seasons. There appears little doubt but that the climate has experienced a material change here, so that the winters are neither of the same intensity, or duration, as formerly; and probably this is the result of the land being better drained, so that the evaporation from its surface is diminished; while the great quantity of wood cleared from the face of the country has contributed to diminish the quantity of humidity.

On the 21st the current of the river was again arrested; the Neva was finally closed for the season, and its surface destined to become the scene of many a joyous sport, ere the genial warmth of spring should restore its fluidity. The thermometer stood this day at

Digitized by Google

nine degrees of frost. In six hours after the river had closed, a few Russians had the hardihood to cross over it. Notwithstanding the precautions of the police, some lives are generally lost, in this way, every season.

As soon as the river was deemed sufficiently solid, the police began forming roads across it, at the usual ferries, by levelling the ice, in which operation they were materially assisted by a fall of snow. The line of road was then more clearly indicated by fir-trees planted on each side, with slips laid in inclined planes on the banks of the river, to facilitate the passage of carriages. The scene now became truly animating, the people beginning to cross the river in all directions, every one apparently gratified at the earnest thus received of a permanent winter.

Soon afterward, the Isaac Bridge was replaced, which was effected by cutting out the ice piecemeal, and forcing it under the surface of the main mass, when it is carried away by the current of the river. In this manner a channel is formed, into which the pontoons are replaced, one by one, until the whole are restored; a

Digitized by Google

more pleasant road is thus made by the bridges, than what is afforded by the slips and inclined planes of boards before described.

During the remainder of the month, the whole of January, and the commencement of February, the frost continued without interruption, the greatest intensity of cold being on the 5th of February, when the thermometer was down at twenty-four degrees of frost, equal to twenty-two degrees below zero, of Fahrenheit.*

Whenever the cold exceeds seventeen degrees of frost, the various public amusements, as well as private parties, are suspended; that is, either do not take place, or break up earlier than usual. This regulation was adopted in consequence of some coachmen having been frozen to death, while waiting in the streets with their carriages.

On the 13th of February a great change was experienced, the weather becoming sensibly warmer, and the thermometer rising to the freezing point, after which it continued

* See Appendix G for a register of the thermometer during the present winter.

Digitized by Google

mild for the remainder of the month. On the 4th of March the snow began to disappear from the streets, and, in a few days after, wheel carriages to resume the places of sledges. On the 10th the snow was so far melted on the surface of the river, that in crossing with my droshka, the water in some places reached to the horses' middles. Of course the ice underneath must now become more tender; however, the roads are always the last parts to give way, owing to the repeated pressure having rendered them so compact, that it is not unusual, after other parts of the river have become clear, to see them go off separately in solid bodies. In order to prevent accidents, the police, for some days before the ice is expected to break up, try its strength from time to time; and when it is no longer deemed safe, its passage is interdicted, at first to carriages, and afterwards to foot passengers.

Previous to the river breaking up, the inhabitants fill their cellars with ice, for summer use. This is generally done by contract, at the expence of from one to three guineas, according to the size of the cellar. For this

Digitized by Google

purpose a portion of the river is railed in, and the ice cut out into cubes of about a yard square.

At length, on the 8th of April, the chains of the Neva were once more loosened; the bridges were consequently taken away to allow the masses of ice to pass, and the communications with the opposite sides of the river again interrupted.

When the river becomes sufficiently free from ice, a particular ceremony is observed, previous to any boats being allowed to cross. The governor passes over in his boat from the fortress to the palace, where he presents the emperor with a goblet of the water of the river; the emperor then returns a silver goblet filled with wine, which, with the salver on which it is presented, becomes the perquisite of the governor.* As soon as the governor places his foot on shore, a signal-gun fires, the free passage of the river is then restored.

I shall conclude this chapter with a few

* This vessel formerly, instead of wine, used to be filled with ducats.

Digitized by Google

remarks on the capability of the Russians to bear the variations of temperature, to which their climate is subject.

Although the Russian is generally supposed to be adapted by constitution to support intensity of cold, and certainly is enabled to do so by the precautions he takes against it, being almost literally imbedded in furs or woollen clothing, yet heat appears to be his favourite element; at least, he puts on his winter clothing sooner than the foreign resident, and continues to wear it longer in the spring. If you inquire why he does so, you receive a proverb in reply, the literal sense of which is, that "Heat breaks no bones."

The apartments of the higher classes of Russians, in winter, are carefully guarded from the external cold by double windows and other precautions, and kept at a temperature of from sixty to seventy degrees, Fahrenheit, by means of stoves. Those of the lower classes, termed isbas, are heated to such a degree, that a person unaccustomed to them would find a difficulty in supporting

Digitized by Google

the temperature; the heat, however, is not more annoying than the smell, as they not only make use of the same apartment for every domestic purpose, but also as a sleeping room: in short, the smell of a stable is comparatively odoriferous. If a Russian is sent to prison, and finds it warm and close, he enters it with apparent satisfaction, exclaiming, "Oh, it is warm!" I am satisfied, therefore, that the general opinion of his preferring cold is erroneous;—he accommodates himself to it, because it is his interest to do so; and supports it better, because he is better provided, since, during the winter season, his house-keeping expences are diminished, by the great facility afforded to the conveyance of provisions from the inland districts, or distant provinces, without which advantage the Russian capital could ill sustain the rigour of a severe winter. It may be added, as a farther reason why the Russian is not better adapted to bear a rigorous winter than his more southern neighbours, that the frequent indulgence in warm, re-

Digitized by Google

laxing baths, as well as the excessive heat of his apartment, where he always crowds to the warmest place, sleeping even on the stove itself, must necessarily increase his susceptibility of the influence of cold.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

Departure from St. Petersburg—The emperor's colony—Sarskoe-Selo—Ijora—Quarrel between the guard and coachman—New road to Moscow—Exchange diligences—The river Volghof—Military colony—Novogorod—Crestzi—Yajelbitza—Pearl fishery—Valdai—Edrova—Post-drivers—Post establishment between Petersburg and Moscow—Vichni-Volotchok—Torjak—Russian leather—Medoe—Tver—Klin—Moscow—Observations on the author's arrangements.

The 13th of March, 1823, was the day I determined upon for my departure from St. Petersburg, having taken my place in the diligence of that day, from thence to Moscow. The hour fixed was nine o'clock. I was, however, in considerable danger of being left behind, owing to the delay experienced in packing my baggage; an arrangement which requires very deliberate attention on my part, and which I had been prevented effecting, according to my

Digitized by Google

ordinary custom, on the preceding evening, in consequence of having been detained at a party, where I had been taking leave of many of my kind friends. It is true, I had plenty of offers of assistance, elicited by the opinion entertained of my own helplessness; an opinion, by the bye, which is very erroneous. I find, by experience, that the best way is to lock myself up in my room, like a schoolboy, who has a difficult task to perform; for were I once to get confused, the presence and assistance of a second person would only serve to distract me further, and to make confusion more confused. By observing this principle, I have acquired such methods of arrangement, that I not only know precisely where every thing lies that is contained in my personal baggage, but even to direct my friends at home how to find any article that I may have left behind me.

Before I had completed this indispensable business, several successive messengers came to apprise me that the coach was in readiness; and, I believe, I am indebted for its detention to a party of my friends, who had assembled at the office to take their last leave of me. The

Digitized by Google

chief amongst these was my old and particular friend C——, to whose kindness I feel myself indebted for the greater part of the happiness I had so long been enjoying, and who appeared to make it his study to throw me into the way of every thing that could contribute to my gratification, by introducing me amongst the respectable and extensive circle of his acquaintance, by whom he is universally beloved and esteemed. I shall leave it to the reader to imagine the emotions of mind with which I bade adieu to such a friend.

> "Ah never shall my soul forget
> The friend I found so cordial hearted;
> Dear shall be the hour we met,
> And dear shall be the time we parted."

But in thus eulogising my estimable friend, let me not appear forgetful of the many others, whose constant kindness and hospitality have left upon my heart an impression never to be erased. To these kind souls, I again repeat the truest farewell of as sincere a heart as ever throbbed with the warm pulse of gratitude.

I had now the pleasure of finding a coun-

Digitized by Google

tryman in one of my fellow travellers, a Mr. M--, to whom I received an introduction, from a mutual friend, on entering the coach. As soon as my first emotions had subsided, I began to reconnoitre our vehicle, and found it a comfortable well-stuffed carriage mounted on easy springs; intended to convey four inside and as many outside passengers, two of the latter of whom were seated in a kind of cabriolet in front, and the other two in a similar structure at the back of the carriage. The coachman and guard sat together on a box in front, and the whole were drawn by six horses, four of which ran abreast near the carriage, with two leaders, mounted by a postillion on the right, in front of them. Besides Mr. M. and myself, the inside was occupied by an officer of engineers and his servant, the former of whom proved a very gentlemanly, intelligent man, well acquainted with the French and German languages. On the outside were, an old German, who superintended some manufactory near Moscow, a Russian money-changer, a fishmonger, and another person, of whose calling I am ignorant.

Digitized by Google

We travelled the first fourteen versts from the city gate on a straight and level road; after which, we ascended a hill, about half way up which is a beautiful fountain that was erected in 1807. The top of this hill commands a fine prospect, with St. Petersburg in the distance. Two versts farther is a village, called the Emperor's Colony, consisting of a row of twenty-four handsome wooden houses, with a watch-tower in the centre. At the distance of twenty-two versts we passed through the town of Sarskoe-Selo, close to which there is a village built in the Chinese style, which has a very pleasing effect. The imperial palace at this place I have already described.

Our first stage, which consisted of thirty-three versts, terminated at the village of Ijora. After this we travelled twenty-four versts to Tosna, a neat and extensive village of nearly two versts and a half in length. Soon after leaving the latter place, our progress was arrested by a direful quarrel between our guard and coachman; the former of whom had given the latter a good thrashing, because he did not drive fast enough to please him.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Coachee in consequence dismounted from his box and announced his determination to drive no farther, appealing at the same time to the passengers to justify the propriety of his conduct. At length, by dint of reasoning, and the still more powerful influence of a bribe, a mode of argument very persuasive to a Russian, he was prevailed upon to resume his seat; after which he drove the remainder of his stage at a much greater rate, concealing his chagrin, if he felt any, by singing all the way. I believe it is not unusual for the lower classes in Russia to settle all disputes by the above kind of reference or arbitration; perhaps it would be better if the custom extended itself to the higher classes. We had strong reason, afterward, to imagine that the above altercation was concerted between the parties, in order to get a feeling into the pockets of their passengers. Many of these people, I am assured, will readily submit to a good beating, provided they can be remunerated for it with drink-money.

Our route now lay through an uninteresting country, with immense forests of fir timber,

Digitized by Google

extending on each side of the road; and where with the exception of occasional villages, little evidence of population could be traced. On entering each of these villages you are struck by a notification, attached to a pole, of the number of *souls* it contains—that is, of male inhabitants; were it not too gross a libel on the sex—a libel decidedly contradicted in their history, by the names of Catharine and other heroines, one would imagine that this was intended to intimate that their women had *no* souls.

At seven in the evening we arrived at a decent post-house, about sixty miles distant from St. Petersburg, where we made a comfortable dinner. Here we were joined by a gentleman and lady, who had travelled from St. Petersburg in their own sledge, and who were proceeding to the most eastern parts of Siberia, where the former had an appointment as agent to the American Fur Company at Okotsk. They were impatient to get without delay to the end of their journey, which did not accord with my arrangements for making more or less protracted stays in the principal

Digitized by Google

towns on the road, or I might have been induced to have solicited permission to accompany them; having seriously proposed to myself the design of penetrating, through its interior, to the farthest extremity of Siberia.

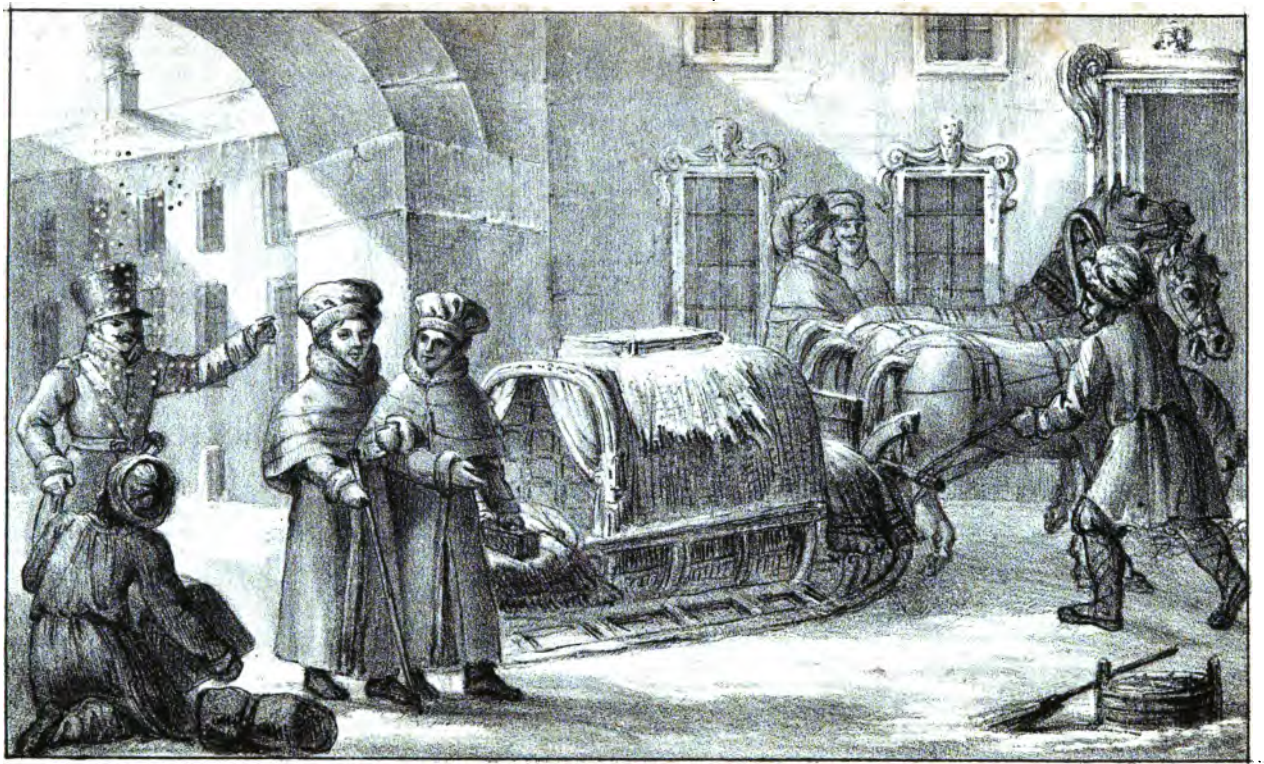
At the end of our next stage, we were disappointed in our expectations of finding a refreshing cup of tea; the only beverage we could procure was cold water, which was handed to us in a ladle. This station terminated the new road, which has been forming from St. Petersburg, at the distance of one hundred and fourteen versts from that city; as soon as the season admits, it will be rapidly continued, until it is extended to Moscow, nearly a thousand soldiers being occupied in making it. When completed, it will form an excellent firm road, with brick and stone bridges over all the rivers and rivulets. The average expence of construction, it is said, will not be less than forty thousand roubles for every verst.

Until four o'clock in the morning, we did not find it necessary to close the windows of our carriage, but at this time, a high and cold wind compelled us to do so. Soon afterwards,

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google



del.d by Gauci Jun.r

Printed by N. Chater & C.o 33 Fleet S.t

Vol.1 Page 195.

Digitized by Google

we met the sledge diligence from Moscow, which we exchanged for our wheel carriage; to effect this, however, we were obliged to return four miles to the last station. The party we took the places of were a company of French comedians; and we found the exchange far from being in our favour, and were convinced that these actors would have an easier part to perform on the stage they had now entered upon, than on the rough boards they had so lately quitted.

About a mile from this place, our party noticed a large wolf, who was marching very leisurely along the side of a wood, and who would not deign to hasten his pace, although considerable noise was made with the view of alarming him. Soon after this, we crossed the river Volghof, over a long wooden bridge, and entered the ancient city and republic of Novogorod. My companions noticed that the country had, for some time, become more hilly, diversified and pictuiresque, as well as more thickly inhabited. Among the edifices observed in the vicinity of this city, were several monasteries, a class of building in general

Digitized by Google

most advantageously situated, the monks, in all ages, having, in the midst of their heavenly aspirations, sufficient eye to the good things of this world, as well as sufficient taste, to select the most favoured spots for their earthly tabernacles.

Among the more interesting places in this neighbourhood, is a military colony, lately established according to the plan of Count Araktcheef, consisting of an extensive line of buildings, with a steepled church in the centre, and ornamented in front, with a row of lime trees.*

We arranged with the guard not to hurry us away, that we might have the opportunity of visiting some of the more interesting points of Novogorod. Accordingly we went to the residence of the celebrated Marpha, widow of the last president of this republic, who made so noble an effort, after the death of her husband, to maintain its independence. A small portion only of this house is standing. We also went to the cathedral, dedicated to St. Sophia,

* See Dr. Lyall's pamphlet on the Military Colonies of Russia.

Digitized by Google

and which has been erected more than six hundred years. Here we were shewn the incorruptible remains of several saints, particularly of Saint Nikita, which are said to have lain five hundred and fifty years; also of Vladimer, the son of Yarosloff; of St. Anne, his wife, and of his uncle, Prince Theodore. One of the doors, which is of brass, and covered with scriptural characters in basso relievo, is said to have been sent by Vladimer, from Kerson, in the Crimea, after the capture of that city from the Greeks. In the dome is a picture of our Saviour, which tradition says, was originally painted with the hand held up and expanded, in the act of blessing the people, but which, on the following day, was discovered to be closed, a state in which it has ever since remained.

On leaving Novogorod, we crossed the Volghof again, on a raft, and proceeded by a bye-road, which saved us one-third of the distance, to the next stage. This road, however, was very bad, partly in consequence of the deficiency of snow, and partly from its being made of trees. We drank tea, at the distance of

Digitized by Google

about forty miles from Novogorod, at a point where the Valdai Hills are said to commence.

About two o'clock on the following morning, we arrived at the small town of Crestzi, containing about four hundred male inhabitants; and in two hours afterwards at a station where we took our tea, in company with two Germans, who were on their way to St. Petersburg, from Salataouste, or Soningham, in the Ural Mountains, where there is an extensive manufacture of swords, thirty-thousand of which are annually sent to the capital.

At eight o'clock we breakfasted at Yajelbitza, distant three hundred and eleven versts from St. Petersburg, and four hundred and seventeen from Moscow. The peasants of this place not unfrequently offer pearls for sale to the traveller, and which are the produce of a shell-fish (the Unio Margaritifera) that inhabits the River Polimite, as well as a lake that is situated in this neighbourhood. They are also found in a variety of rivers belonging to the governments of Novogorod, Tver, and some others.

Digitized by Google

The following account of the pearl fisheries of this country, taken from a pamphlet written on the subject by Dr. Fischer, president of the Medical Academy at Moscow, may not be uninteresting.

"In 1721, the search and fishing for pearls was, by order of the College of Mines, settled on the crown, and in the above mentioned provinces, several noblemen received private instructions to superintend the fishing. As the result, however, did not answer their expectations, in the year 1731 the fishing was declared, by order of the senate, free to all, upon condition only, that the largest and clearest pearls should be brought to the College of Commerce, by the chief fishermen, who were to receive a reward in proportion to their quality; the smallest pearls were to be the property of the fishermen."

Subsequent licenses have confirmed this freedom of fishery, reserving in full force, the claim to the clearest and largest pearls, particularly such as are of the size of a sparrow's egg.

There is a pearl, which Dr. F. describes in

Digitized by Google

the above work, to be seen at Moscow, the property of a Greek merchant, named Zosima, which, perhaps, has not its equal in the world. It is, however, not the produce of this country, but said to have been brought from the East Indies.

This inestimable pearl, which is preserved in a triple box, inlaid with precious stones, faced with a convex lens, intended to increase still farther its apparent magnitude, and under which it lies embedded in cotton wool, like a phœnix amidst its ashes, weighs no less than twenty-seven carats and seven-eights; it is perfectly spherical; its colour exceeds the metallic splendour of highly polished silver; but at the same time posseses the most transparent brightness. When separated from its coverings, and placed on a sheet of white paper, it rolls upon the surface like a ball of quicksilver, and, somewhat like the latter, is only secured by the finger with the greatest nicety. Dr. Fischer bears personal testimony to the admiration—nay, astonishment! with which it is viewed by all strangers.

After leaving Yajelbitza, the roads were so

Digitized by Google

bad, as frequently to compel us to quit them, and take to the fields, or where most snow was to be found. At one o'clock we came within sight of the town of Valdai, with Lake Ilmen on its left; in the centre of which is a small island, with a monastery upon it, which makes a very picturesque appearance. In this convent the unfortunate Ivan was confined, previous to his being removed to his last place of imprisonment, at the fortress of Schlusselberg, where he met his untimely fate, in consequence of the misdirected zeal of an enthusiast.

We were here informed that there was so great a scarcity of corn in this neighbourhood, during the last summer, that the peasants were compelled to use dried moss as a substitute; and yet the neighbouring monks would not allow the half starving people to take any of the fish with which the lake abounds. This water contains a fish which so much resembles the herring, that it might be called the fresh-water herring. Linnæus terms it the *clupea harengus*. Immense quantities of a small fish are taken here, called snitke; it is the *eperla-*

Digitized by Google

nus of Linnæus, and said to be the same as our smelt; these fish are about two inches and a half in length, and, when fresh, of a beautiful silvery hue. The peasants have a mode of curing them, by putting them, as soon as caught, into ovens of a moderate temperature, and gradually, but thoroughly, drying them; they are then packed in baskets, and sent off to St. Petersburg, Moscow, and other parts of Russia, where they are retailed at from three-pence to four-pence per pouud. They are also forwarded in their fresh state during the winter.

Our next stage was Edrova, which we found all animation, in consequence of its being the *maslanitza*, or butter week, so named, from its being permitted to eat butter, milk, and cheese during its continuance. These holidays precede the long and rigid fast of Lent. This period is joyously celebrated, particularly among the lower classes, who partake of the various amusements of ice-hills, &c. &c. We met several carts filled with young damsels, in their holiday attire, and who appeared very happy in singing their national airs.

Digitized by Google

We even got into the midst of some groups of them in the streets, when my companions delighted them much with presents of gingerbread.

In our next stage, we found the road considerably improved. We were not a little amused with the eccentricity of our driver, who appeared to have been making too free with the good cheer at Edrova. He had, however, his horses under such excellent command, that he could, at any time, set them off at full speed, by merely holding his hand up. The horses in Russia, it must be observed, are rarely driven, even in gentlemen's carriages, without blinkers over their eyes. Nor does this appear productive of accidents; on the contrary, I am told, that it is unusual for a horse even to start in this country. The peasantry are uniformly expert in their management: they often talk to them as if they were children, telling them that they shall receive an additional quantity of oats, if they behave well; or that the gentlemen they are conveying will treat them with a glass of brandy—an ingenious mode of

Digitized by Google

giving their passengers a hint. At all events, the poor animals themselves profit but little by this professed kindness; for, with the exception of having enough to eat, they have little attention paid them, but are turned, after the severest journeys, into unstalled stables, without cleaning, or any other care. These horses are small, ugly creatures, possessing, it is true, great hardihood, but which, in the posting service, seldom holds out for more than two or three years.

As the posting between St. Petersburg and Moscow forms a peculiar establishment, I shall avail myself of this opportunity of detailing its leading features. In order to facilitate the communication between his old and new capitals, and diminish the expences of travelling, Peter the Great caused villages, with a population of five or six hundred boors, to be attached to each post station, at the distance of every twenty or thirty versts, and who were obliged to convey the traveller at a fixed and reasonable rate. These people were freed from other duties, and had peculiar privileges granted to them, which they still enjoy.

Digitized by Google

A certain number of these boors are obliged to be on constant duty at the post-house, and in which they relieve each other, according to such arrangement as may be agreed on between themselves, those who are disengaged being then at liberty to occupy themselves in such other pursuits as their interests or inclinations may suggest. Some of them become carriers of goods to distant places; as Dresden, Leipsic, &c.; and others engage in various trades. It often happens that the latter have no horses fit for the duties of the post; in which case they are allowed to engage with their brethren to act as their substitutes. In consequence of this arrangement, the traveller generally finds plenty of horses on the road;—there is, however, one result from it which occasionally appears incomprehensible to him. It is this: that when he arrives at a station where the driver, whose turn it is to take him forward, happens to have no horses, he observes a number of these people form a circle, and commence a warm and earnest conversation, which terminates, at length, in

Digitized by Google

an appeal to luck, by a casting of lots. This arises from the necessity the driver for the occasion is under to hire a substitute, and his natural anxiety to incur as little expence, in so doing, as possible. At length, having brought some one individual down to his lowest point, it generally happens that several others immediately offer to serve him for the same price. In this case, the future driver is determined by each marking a piece of money, for instance, a copeck, which is put into a hat, when, the whole being shaken together, one is drawn out, and its owner declared the successful candidate.

These regulations apply to all the post stations intermediate to the two cities, excepting the three nearest to Moscow, which are regularly contracted for by government, as on other post roads.

The price of posting, on two or three occasions, has been raised since the time of Peter the Great. It is now eight copecks, or eight-tenths of a penny, per verst, for each horse; which, with two copecks for the government

Digitized by Google

licence, or padarogeney as it is called, to take post-horses, makes one penny per verst, or three halfpence per mile.

On Sunday, the 16th, we arrived, soon after midnight, at Vychni-Volotchok, a town of some magnitude, chiefly remarkable for a fine canal, which unites the rivers Tsna and Tvertza, and establishes the communication between St. Petersburg and the Volga. A friend of mine observed last summer, in passing through this place, many of the women walking about the town with their teeth blackened, and which is effected by applying a wash formed with corrosive sublimate and nitrous acid. This custom, I believe, was formerly very general throughout Russia. I am told that their teeth not unfrequently acquire this engaging colour through mere neglect, without the trouble of staining them artificially.

At eight o'clock we arrived at the town of Torjak, where we refreshed ourselves with ablution, clean linen, and a good breakfast, the comforts of the whole of which, those who, like ourselves, had been travelling three

Digitized by Google

days and nights, over bad roads, and without sleep, will readily appreciate. This is a neat town, with fourteen principal churches, and the river Tvertza running through the middle of it. It has an extensive manufactory of fine leather, embroidered with gold and silver.

I took some pains to ascertain the mode in which the well-known Russian leather is prepared. Its peculiar smell is given in the first stage of dressing, by using, instead of oil, or in combination with it, a bituminous matter, called dyoggett, which is extracted from the young birch trees in the following manner:—The roots and branches being first cut off, the trunk of the tree is laid on an inclined plane, upon a wire grating, under which a fire is lighted; this causes the sap contained in the bark, and particularly the outer coat, to ferment and ooze out from the lower extremity, where it is received in a vessel placed for that purpose. The liquor thus obtained, after being cleaned from dirt and woody particles, is boiled down to a proper consistency, or until it much resembles tar. The best dyoggett is, however, said to be

Digitized by Google

procured from the bark alone, when stripped from the tree.

Our next station was Medoe, which we quitted at three o'clock. The road was now so bad, that our outside passengers, who were in a smaller sledge behind us, were three different times turned over, and left cooling themselves in the snow. We now arrived within sight of the town of Tver, still distant twelve miles from us; and soon after passed two monasteries, one on each side of the road. About six miles from Tver, we entered an avenue of trees, which apparently extended to the town, but terminated at the end of two miles. After this, the country became more picturesque, possessing many fine extensive prospects, in which the city, with its glittering cupolas, illuminated by the setting sun, as my companions informed me, shone beautifully conspicuous.

On entering Tver, we crossed the celebrated Volga on the ice. My companions here observed several groups of females, dressed in a novel and beautiful costume, and who were enjoying the last holiday previous to Lent.

Digitized by Google

Their dress consisted of a white or coloured muslin or silken gown, embroidered with various colours, or with gold or silver, over which was worn a mantle of an elegant figured silk, bordered with fur, which reached to the lower part of the back; the head-dress was a small pointed bonnet, embroidered with gold. We were driven to a decent inn, kept by an Italian, where we were much refreshed by a tolerably fair dinner; any kind of stimulus naturally would have this effect, after the great exertion and fatigue we had undergone.

We at length recommenced our journey, and experienced a very cold night, the thermometer indicating ten degrees of frost, equal to about twenty-two degrees below the freezing point of Fahrenheit. The worst of it was, that it was impossible to sleep, such was the jolting of our carriage, except, indeed, during the periods of changing horses, and then we were soon started from out of it again. At seven o'clock we breakfasted at Klin, and were comforted with the information that our road to Moscow was still worse than any we had yet experienced. We had, however, the

Digitized by Google

satisfaction of knowing that we should certainly arrive at the great city before the close of day.

The country now became more hilly and picturesque, and, as we approached nearer to Moscow, was ornamented with monasteries and gentlemen's seats. About four versts from the city we passed the Petrovsky Palace, which was occupied by Napoleon, previous to his taking up his residence at the Kremlin.

During this last stage, the motion of our sledge could only be compared to the pitching of a small vessel in a short sea, and, I believe, had a similar effect on some of my companions. It occasioned one of our shafts to break; but the deficiency was soon replaced.

At six o'clock we entered the gates of Moscow, and soon reached the diligence-office, from whence I lost no time in finding out, with the kind assistance of Mr. M——, my bankers, Messrs. G—— and H——, to whom I had previously written, to request they would do me the favour of causing lodgings to be secured for me. They received me with every kindness and attention, and placed me in the same hotel where Mr. M—— also

Digitized by Google

purposed to take up his quarters. I was fortunate, however, in another respect: Messrs. G—— and H—— were that evening parting with a servant, whom they thought might suit my purpose. There were two objections to him: the one, that he was guilty of impertinence; the other, that he only spoke the Russian language. However, after well revolving the point, I determined to engage him, as my ignorance of this language would, in great measure, do away with the sense of his impertinence; at the same time I hoped to glean some words, at least, of the Russian tongue, in consequence of the intercourse which would necessarily subsist between us.

Some of my readers will be inclined to inquire what pleasure or information I could have derived, under my ignorance of the language, from the journey I have just been describing, had I not met with two companions who were able to converse with me, and consequently to explain every thing of interest which occurred on the road? and also how I would have acted, under such cir-

Digitized by Google

cumstances, on my arrival at Moscow, without such assistance?

To the first of these questions I reply, that I should, as I am prepared to do on all occasions when left to myself, have depended on the resources of my own mind, if nothing of sufficient interest to elicit my attention occurred. But although I have eyes, and do not see, and ears, without being able to understand the language in which they are addressed, yet I still find ways of comprehending the more ordinary occurrences of life. For instance: when the horses are changed, I hear the former ones removed and others substituted, as well as the remarks of their attendants; and it requires no great stretch of imagination to divine the conversation of ostlers and drivers;—nor should I have been at a loss to recognize the pitiful solicitations of the beggars on the road side. The same principle applies, more or less, to the higher incidents of a journey. In travelling, however, through Russia, there is no great use for eyes, for the general features are

Digitized by Google

ordinary and little varied, its towns and villages very similar in appearance; there are few spots where contending armies have fought their battles, and no indications of former heroes, with the exception of a few tumuli, which the Tartar hordes have reared as the memorials of their dead; besides, the movements of the post neither allow time for the artist or antiquary to indulge in their favourite pursuits. Perhaps the best way is to get forward, as fast as possible, from one large town to another, where better chances of collecting matter of interest will be likely to present themselves. Italy! fair Italy! is the country which offers the highest allurements to the traveller, and where every step he takes is classic ground!

With regard to the second question, I beg to remark, that I never attempt a journey to a strange place, without being provided with the address of some house or other, to which I can appeal. On arriving at the coach-office, I should have waited patiently until the guard had settled his office business;

Digitized by Google

after which, the hope of reward would have induced him to conduct me to the place I desired. In this way I have often proceeded, under similar circumstances, and never met with any difficulty which I was unable to surmount.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

Moscow—Various arrangements—Captains J.—Convent of Devichi-poley—Military School—The Treasury—Statues of Minin and Pajorsky—Military Hospital—The Kremlin—Protestant Church—Cannon in the Kremlin—Museum of Natural History—Tower of Ivan-Veleki—Feast of the Annunciation—Kremlin Gardens—College of Foreign Affairs—English Club—Hospital of Count Scharametief—Princess Bores Galitzin—Nobility Assembly Rooms—Fish dinner at a Russian traiteurs—General Balk-Polief—Variability of the weather—Madame Anti's concert—Foundling Hospital—Preparation for Palm Sunday—Author's power of discriminating female beauty—Palm Sunday—Good Friday—Easter-day—The festivities of Easter-week—Annual public promenade—Horrid report—Superstitions of the Russians—Manufacturing and procuring Saints—Omens—Various customs—Fine weather.

My kind bankers had not placed me in the most fashionable hotel in Moscow, but in one where they knew my comforts would be attended to, and which from its central situation would facilitate my pursuits of information and amusement.

Digitized by Google

My first object was to hire a sledge, for, although the snow was rapidly disappearing, there was still sufficient in the streets of Moscow to make this the preferable mode of conveyance. The expence of this carriage, including the coachman, was from four to five roubles per day; however, after using it for a week, I was induced to exchange it for a droshka, at an additional charge of one rouble.

The regular wages of my servant were about one guinea per month, but on enquiring how much I should pay him in addition to board himself, to my great surprise, he only demanded five roubles per month; I discovered, however, that he calculated upon a variety of perquisites, and fees from the different tradesmen he might be the means of introducing me to; nay, he even had the impudence one day to complain, that a coachman whom I had engaged, had failed to give him the promised silver rouble, adding, that it was impossible a servant could live without perquisites.

Whether his conscience prompted it, I know not, but was informed that he complained of my frequently suspecting him of

Digitized by Google

cheating, or robbing me, particularly if I happened to enquire for any article that might have been mislaid, or removed, by the servants of the house. This is a general feature, in Russian servants, who on such occasions commonly reply, "Do you think that I have done it?" or "Do you suppose I have stolen it?"

On the day after my arrival, hearing that my friends, the Captains J——, were still at Moscow, I succeeded in making out their residence, but was sorry to learn that they were both on the point of leaving Moscow; the one for the Crimea, the other for Germany and England. This I regretted exceedingly, as, independent of their uniform friendly attentions to myself, they were men of intelligence; their pursuits similar to my own, as they were inordinately intent on acquiring information respecting the institutions, customs, and manners of the people we were travelling amongst.

I dined with them, and in the evening had the pleasure of meeting them at Dr. K's where many of the English residents were assembled; I

Digitized by Google

was compelled, however, to retire early, in consequence of the excessive soreness of various muscles of my neck and shoulders, occasioned by the constant jolting to which I had been exposed during my late journey, my head having had, for the greater part of the time, to perform the office of an inverted pendulum, the effects of which did not cease for nearly a fortnight,

On the 20th I paid a visit to the Countess Orloff, whom I had the honour of knowing at St. Petersburg. This lady, who is extremely amiable and rich, continues, it is said, in the single state, from an apprehension that a favoured gentleman would be more influenced by affection for her property than her person; an apprehension, however, which, in my humble opinion, ought to be negatived by her many virtues, as well as personal attractions. I believe there is no lady in Russia better known, or more deservedly estimated, than this princess.

On Sunday I attended divine service, at the church of Galitzin's Hospital, where there is an excellent choir; after which, I had the

Digitized by Google

honour of dining with Major-General Verofkin, the commandant of Moscow.

On the succeeding day, I accompanied a a friend to hear the service at the Convent of Devichi-poley, where the principal part of the vocal performers are young nuns. There was a gentleman present on this occasion, whose attention to these young devotees, expressed by keeping his eyes fixed upon them, making signs, &c. were so marked as to attract the notice of the older sisters, many of whom were mixed with the congregation. This gave rise to a ludicrous occurrence; after the service was concluded, these good ladies actually followed him out of the church, and made a violent attack upon him; which he, by a foolish attempt to defend himself, only served to aggravate. When their warmth had somewhat abated, my friend ventured to enter into conversation with them; and at length obtained permission to visit their cells; when we were ushered into a small room of about ten feet square, with a smaller one adjoining to it as a dormitory. On the table were lying needlework representations, on velvet, of their saints.

Digitized by Google

The working of these seemed to be their chief employment, and certainly it is preferable to complete idleness; but it appears to me, that if these good christians were anxious to benefit the community, they might occupy their time more consistently in imparting instruction to the children of the poor; since it is notorious, that in this country the females of the lower order are not only unable to read or write, but incapable of using the needle; the consequences of which are, that having no resources within themselves, when the domestic occupations of the day are over, they generally dispose of the remainder of their time in sleep, or idleness. It was in this convent that Murat, after the destruction of the city, took up his residence; a circumstance that contributed essentially to its protection.

On the 25th I visited the Military School, originally an old palace, situated near the Summer Gardens, and conducted upon the Lancasterian plan. It is applied to the education of the soldiers' sons, generally with a view of qualifying them to act as non-commissioned officers. Some of these boys are instructed in

Digitized by Google

music, under a German master, for the service of the military bands, and are by no means despicable performers; others are taught drawing, particularly as applicable to the planning of military manœuvres, fortifications, &c. Every thing is conducted in military order; they are marched to their desks, and sit down by word of command; and when the master calls up a class, they are formed and marched up to him by the head boy. The dinner is conducted upon the same principle, which, I believe, applies to every institution of the kind throughout the empire, there being one in the chief town of each government. We can scarcely wonder that, under such a system, the Russian army should prove superior soldiers.

On the 26th I accompanied a party of friends to the Treasury, where the thrones, crowns, jewels, &c. &c. of the czars,* and emperors of

* "This word is not a corruption of Cæsar, as many have supposed. It is an ancient oriental title found in the Sclavonian translation of the Bible, given originally to the emperor's of the East, and afterwards to the khans of the Tartars. It signifies, in Persian, supreme authority; and is to be observed in the terminations of the names of the kings of Assyria and Babylon, as Phalassar, Nabonassar, &c."

Vide *Caramzin's History of Russia.*

Digitized by Google

Russia are preserved, and had the honour of seating myself in one of the former, which was that of Bores Godenoff; I was informed, however, that one of the attendants appeared very indignant at this presumption.

After leaving this place, we visited the beautiful bronze statues of Minin and Pajorsky; the former of whom was a butcher of Novogorod, said to have been chiefly instrumental, by his wealth, and energetic exertions, in promoting the successes of the latter against the Poles, when they were masters of this city, and whom they eventually succeeded in expelling.

On the following day I went over the Military Hospital, a noble building, situated near the Summer Gardens, at the opposite end to where the Military School stands; two of its wards are so large, that on throwing open the folding doors between them, you have a range of not less than two hundred and ten paces; the patients are placed on each side of these wards, and every care appears to be taken of their comforts as well as of their health.

The soldiers' wives are received into an adjoining building.

Digitized by Google

On Saturday I walked to the Kremlin, and examined the wonderful bell that is to be seen there, to the top of which I mounted with the assistance of a ladder. It lies on the ground, into which its lower part has sunk considerably. The reason assigned for this situation is, that having been cast and hung on this spot, the beam to which it was suspended was accidentally burnt; the bell, in consequence, fell to the ground, and broke a piece from out of its side. I am inclined, however, to imagine that it had been flawed in casting, as the edge of the fractured part has a smooth surface.

This enormous bell was recast from a former one of immense size, with the addition of two thousand poods more of metal, in the year 1734, during the reign of the Empress Anna. It weighs three hundred and sixty thousand pounds English, equal to more than a hundred and sixty tons; whereas the heaviest bell in England, which is in Exeter Cathedral, scarcely weighs five tons and a half. Its height is nearly twenty-one feet, its diameter twenty-two feet eight inches, and

Digitized by Google

the height of the opening made by the piece falling out, five feet nine inches.

On Sunday I attended the service of the Protestant Church, which was performed by a Swiss clergyman, at the house of Prince Galitzin. Very active measures were taken some time since by the English residents, to build themselves a church in Moscow; but, unfortunately, misunderstandings arose between the members of the committee, in consequence of which the proceedings have been suspended; and, at present, I am informed there is little prospect of an adjustment of the dispute.*

I dined this day with the commandant, whose lady had the day before been delivered of a son. This happy event leads me to notice a singular custom amongst the Russian ladies on such occasions, that when their female friends pay the lying-in visit, each places a ducat under the pillow previous to taking leave.

* I have lately learnt that the Russian Company has contributed a considerable sum towards the erection of a church in this city, and endowed it with a hundred pounds sterling per annum, for the support of a clergyman.

Digitized by Google

On Monday I repeated my visit to the Kremlin, for the purpose of examining the artillery and other arms taken from the enemy during the late war, comprising no less than eight hundred and seventy-five pieces of cannon. We examined also a number of curious brass pieces, some of Russian manufacture, others the spoils of war. Amongst these was a mortar, cast in 1694, by order of Peter the Great, and which, from its immense size, was probably intended for ornament rather than utility, as it appeared too bulky to be manageable; it is five yards long, and its mouth a yard in diameter in the bore. I much astonished the serjeant who accompanied us, by coolly taking off my coat, and creeping to the bottom of it. There is one gun, a sixty-six pounder, not less than eight yards in length, and also some very large and rich brass Turkish pieces, of peculiar workmanship, as well as various others, that are considered great curiosities.

On Tuesday, the 1st of April, I had the gratification of accompanying Professor Fischer to the Museum of Natural History; after

Digitized by Google

which he took me to the University, where he shewed me the museum attached to that institution. I shall not, however, trouble my readers with a description of the contents of either of them, as there was nothing which excited particular interest. The more uncommon animals I examined were the sloth, and another animal found in great numbers on the steppes in the south of Russia, somewhat resembling the kangaroo, and which burrows in the earth after the manner of a rabbit. Dr. Clarke speaks of them, and, indeed, made a pet of one, which became his travelling companion.

On the following day I again visited the Kremlin, and ascended the Tower of Ivan-Veleki, which rises three hundred and eight English feet from the ground. The interior comprises three stories, and contains thirty-one bells; one, which has been cast since the French invasion, weighing more than seveny tons. It is only made use of on grand occasions, when its deep tones are heard in every part of the city.

About this time I was induced to change

Digitized by Google

my residence, and engaged a very commodious and well-furnished apartment in a private house, at the rate of only two guineas per month. I was also to be provided with breakfast, at the expence of about two shillings per week; and, in the event of my choosing to dine at home, I was to pay two roubles and a half for each dinner. These lodgings proved very agreeable, as the other occupants of the house were exquisite professional musicians, and I was frequently delighted with their performances; one lady, in particular, played the harp with unusual taste and science.

Sunday, the 6th of April, was the feast of the annunciation of the Virgin Mary, which is held in great respect among the Russians. On this day it is customary to purchase birds, and give them their liberty. I have to remark, however, that the magpie genus do not appear to profit by this act of benevolence, since it is asserted that none of this tribe are ever to be seen within the precincts of the city, the reason assigned for which is as follows:—A holy monk was one day so much annoyed by

Digitized by Google

the prattling of these birds, that, in his anger, he *cursed them;* the consequence was, that the unhappy wretches found it prudent to remove to the respectful distance of forty versts, and have never since presumed to venture within that circle.

The most noble purpose, however, to which the above principle of benevolence extends itself on this day, is the release of the various prisoners confined for debt in the city gaols; those whose debts are small, by individual acts of charity; and those of a larger amount, by general subscription. Provisions are also sent to such as are imprisoned on criminal accounts.

On this day I again visited the Kremlin, where the various parts of that immense assemblage of buildings were explained to me. We afterwards proceeded to the Alexandrofski, or Kremlin Gardens, that have lately been laid out as a public promenade. They are very beautiful, inclosed in handsome iron railings, and a truly great accommodation to the city. The site of them, two years since, was but a compound of mud and rubbish; so

Digitized by Google

rapid is the progress of improvement in this country!

On Wednesday I took an opportunity of going to the College of Foreign Affairs, where the archives of the empire are kept, and had the pleasure of examining many interesting documents of antiquity, the most ancient of which was a treaty between Yaroslaff Yaroslovitch, Grand Duke of Tver, and the inhabitants of Novogorod, bearing date 1265. There are also preserved here a variety of letters and treaties between Elizabeth of England and the czar Ivan Vasilo-vitch, relative to the commercial relations of the two countries, as well as on other subjects; and amongst the more interesting, was one in which Elizabeth, in reply to a request to that effect, promises the Russian monarch an asylum in her kingdom, with every due honour, in the event of a revolution in his empire; and another in which he begs of her to send him a doctor; the result of which was, that Dr. Robert Jacobs was appointed to that office.

I dined on Friday with a party where I partook, for the first time in my life, of nettle

Digitized by Google

soup, which is, in Russia, the first green soup of the spring. As to the peculiar flavour, I know not how to describe it. I should rather have denominated the mixture, egg soup, from the great quantity it contained of that ingredient.

On the 12th I had the gratification of dining with the English club of this place, but which ought rather to be denominated the Russian club, as nineteen out of twenty of its members are of the latter nation. It is even a more splendid establishment than the club of the same name at St. Petersburg, which I have before described. The service of plate, in particular, is of immense value. Public dinners, are given twice in the week, and are served up in superior style. The reading-room is supplied with a great variety of periodical works, including the English, French, and German newspapers. The principal attractions, however, are the card and billiard tables. There is an excellent regulation here to prevent the members continuing play at unseasonable hours, which is a fine of three roubles for each person who remains after

Digitized by Google

midnight, and which is doubled in a geometrical ratio for every subsequent half hour.

This regulation once led to an amusing result with respect to a Russian gentleman, who, having accidentally laid himself upon a sofa, slept there soundly until five o'clock. His fine for this, accordingly, amounted to not less than fifteen hundred and thirty-six roubles, or sixty-four pounds sterling. It was debated amongst the members whether, as the circumstance was accidental, and not the result of any occupation at cards, &c. he had been guilty of any infringement of the law, so as to be amenable to its penalties. The question was at length, however, decided against him, upon the principle, that the object of the regulation was to prevent the servants from being kept up beyond a reasonable hour. I am informed that the produce of this laudable regulation averages fifty pounds per week, the whole of which is distributed among the poor.

Sunday was the first of April, (O. S.) when the custom prevalent in England, as well as in other parts of Europe, of making April-

Digitized by Google

fools, was observed here. I attended divine service this day, at the Greek church of the noble Hospital of Count Scharametief, in company with a friend. We stood for some time among the mass of the congregation, which General Malanoffsky observing, he politely sent to invite us to join his family party. During the service, I heard the general and his lady eating, which I thought rather indecorous, notwithstanding I had often remarked that the Russians did not refrain from talking on such occasions. I afterwards named this to a friend, who informed me that they were partaking of a kind of roll made expressly for the occasion, and which had previously been blessed by the priest, and which is the first morsel their religion allows them to take when they go to mass.

On the following day I dined with the Princess Bores Galitzin, who took me with her to visit a Scotch lady who was ill, and who, I afterwards learnt, was subsisting on her bounty. This lady had formerly been go-

Digitized by Google

verness in the Galitzin and other families, an occupation which illness had compelled her to relinquish. She had lately suffered the loss of all her savings, by the bankruptcy of her agent, and was thus reduced to the extreme of indigence. This amiable and benevolent princess was not only providing the above unfortunate lady with the necessaries and comforts of life, as well as medical attendance, but either personally, or at least in the person of some part of her family, carried her attentions so far as to visit her daily; nay, I was assured, that the young ladies frequently spent great part of the day in reading to her.

The above is one instance of the charitable principles of the Russians, the action of which, I am assured, is too extensive to be generally known. I have heard many Russian and German tutors complain of being treated by their employers as mere serviles, but am satisfied this is chiefly attributable to their own conduct; at least, I have visited in various families where the English and Swiss instructors have met with the most uniform kindness and respectful treat-

Digitized by Google

ment, and deservedly so, since none have more claim to attention than those who are worthily employed in forming and ennobling the human mind.

On the 15th I went to a concert at the nobility's assembly room, the only mode of public amusement permitted during Lent, when the theatres, opera, and dancing assemblies are all closed.

This assembly room is fifty-six paces in length and thirty-five in breadth, and commodiously fitted up; it is surrounded by an arcade, within its walls, the pillars of which support a gallery; and adjoining, is a suite of apartments intended for card and supper rooms. The principal performers, on the present occasion, were Italians belonging to the opera.

The society to which the rooms belong is very select, as none can be admitted members unless they bear the rank of nobility. The annual subscription is fifty roubles for a gentleman; twenty-five for a married, and ten for an unmarried lady. This subscription provides a concert every Tuesday during Lent, and a

Digitized by Google

ball once a week, throughout the winter; supper and other refreshments are of course considered extras.

On Wednesday the 16th I accompanied two friends to partake of a fish dinner at a Russian traiteur's, no other kind of meat being provided in this house during Lent. Of this, however, there was great abundance dressed in every way that could be imagined. Not even eggs, butter, or milk are allowed at this time, although they use a substitute for the latter, prepared from almonds, and which they term almond cream.

We began our dinner, *a la Russe*, with a glass of bitter brandy, and caviare; then fish soup was placed before us, followed by fish cutlets, minced up, enclosed in paper and fried. As beverage, we had beer, mead, and English porter, our repast concluded, as usual, with coffee.

I was much interested with the arrangements of this house, named the New Trinity, and situated near the Exchange. It contains twelve rooms, and occupies no less than fifty waiters, all dressed in a kind of uniform—that

Digitized by Google

is, in a shirt and trowsers, both of them either red or blue, or checquered with both; or else the trowsers are blue, and the shirt red, or *vice versa*. This shirt, which has no collar, but is buttoned like a frock, close round the neck, descends over the trowsers as low as the knee, and is secured with a girdle round the waist.

The first room you pass through, on entering the house, is the bar, where you are struck with surprise at the immense number of tea-urns, cups, and saucers, piled around it; the wonder, however, ceases on passing through the different apartments, which are crowded with persons enjoying that beverage. One man, who was there at the same time with ourselves, appeared to have a peculiar taste, as he was eating salted cucumbers with his coffee. This house is chiefly frequented by the Russian shopkeepers, who after making a bargain at the exchange, come in to conclude it by paying their money, and drinking it off, as they term it.

In the evening I went to General Balk-Polief's, where a splendid party was assembled. Soon after eleven o'clock we were conducted through a suite of apartments to a

Digitized by Google

small theatre, to witness a *tableau vivant*, representing the inspiration of St. Cecilia, and taken from Reuben's celebrated painting on that subject. In this animated picture the general's eldest daughter personated St. Cecilia. The exhibition lasted about five minutes, being as long a time as the different figures could reasonably be expected to retain their proper positions.

We were now conducted into another apartment, where I was enraptured by a concert of most delightful music. One German master displayed more execution on the piano-forte than I ever remember to have heard elsewhere. He was a pupil of the celebrated Field, an Englishman, who is well known to every lover of music in St. Petersburg and Moscow, as a performer and composer, and who might soon realize a large fortune, as he could occupy his whole mornings at a guinea a lesson, and I am assured, be engaged every evening at five guineas a night; but, alas! like many men of genius, he is accused of indolence and gross negligence of his own interests.

From the music room we returned to the

Digitized by Google

theatre, where a clever Italian exhibited many surprising tricks of legerdemain. His last trick, and *chef d'œuvre*, was the killing, depluming, and cutting into pieces several small birds, which were then put into a stew-pan, with butter and water poured over them; they were now apparently stewed for a minute or two, over a spirit of wine lamp; after which, the cover being removed, out started these little birds, and flew about the room.

The company now, full of wonder and astonishment, left the conjuror to himself, and returned to the music room, where the merry dance commenced with waltzing, followed by a variety of other dances; these were continued until supper was nearly ready; previous to which the following game, named cat and mouse, was started by the younger part of the company. The party first formed a ring; there being a lady and gentleman placed alternately; one person remains within, and another on the outside of the circle; the former representing the cat, the latter the mouse. The object of the cat is to dart out, under the hands of any two of the circle, and

Digitized by Google

seize the mouse, who keeps running round on the outside. The persons forming the ring are to prevent, if possible, the cat's escape from their inclosure, for whenever she gets out, the two who allow the breach are obliged to take the places of cat and mouse. This amusement is not unfrequently carried on at the expence of the flap of a gentleman's coat, or the ornamental parts of a lady's dress.

About four o'clock more than one hundred persons sat down to a most elegant supper; after which, the company returned to the dancing room, and kept up the spirit of the entertainment until seven or eight in the morning.

General Balk-Polief and his family, consisting of his lady and two daughters, without doubt, may be considered among the most polished and accomplished of the Russian nobility. They all speak the English, French, and Italian languages, with great fluency, besides which, the young ladies are conversant with Greek, Latin, and German. As to the General himself, I have heard him at his own table, where he is fond of collecting foreigners

Digitized by Google

of all nations, speak French to one, Italian to another, Portuguese to a third, English to a fourth, German to a fifth, Polish to a sixth; and God knows how many more languages he was not familiar with. He has travelled much in different parts of the continent; was ambassador at the Brazils; and has been twice in England, to the customs of which country he appears particularly partial, as is evidenced by his dinners being occasionally served up in that style; besides his house is fitted up with such taste, elegance, and comfort, that you would almost suppose yourself in a splendid English mansion; he is also a great amateur, and possesses many fine specimens of the arts.

The variability of the weather is such at this time, that it is impossible to foresee, or provide against, the changes of the day; the streets are also, in consequence of the breaking up of the winter, so bad as to make travelling dangerous. My droshka has frequently been on the point of overturning, and once actually was upset. This danger is partly to be attributed to the bad principles on which the pavé is constructed; and partly to the effect of the

Digitized by Google

severe frost and subsequent thaws upon the ground itself.

On the evening of the 17th I accompanied the French consul to a concert at the nobility's assembly rooms, which was for the benefit of Madame Anti, *prima donna* of the opera. Her voice was powerful, but not sufficiently flexible to make her singing entirely agreeable. I remember when I first heard Catalani, that I was more astonished at the power of her voice, than pleased with her execution.

A few days after I made an interesting visit to the Foundling Hospital.

There is, perhaps, no country in which institutions of this nature are more beneficial than in Russia. In the first place, the individuals thus protected, become exclusively the property of the crown, and which, as population is defective, is politically an essential advantage to the community. Secondly, the want of morality in the people is favourable to the increase of illegitimacy; and although there may not be so high a degree of turpitude, or sense of shame, attached to offences of this nature, yet when to this feeling we add the

Digitized by Google

interruption which is experienced to the personal exertions and future prospects of the unfortunate mother, there would, otherwise, be sufficient temptations to lead her to unwarrantable means of getting rid of her unfortunate offspring; even when, as was once the case, a small sum of money was required to be paid on the admission of a child, it was found that this measure led to several acts of infanticide, and the regulation was consequently abolished. Within the first twenty years after the foundation of this institution, thirty-seven thousand six hundred and nine children were admitted; and the present annual average is between four and five thousand, being a tenth part of the number of births in the whole district of Moscow. The majority of the children are brought up in the country, where at the period of my visit, there were eleven thousand and ninety-seven at nurse, while within the walls of the institution were contained only three hundred and forty-seven boys, and three hundred and seventy-three girls.

Digitized by Google

The system of bringing up these foundlings is, if we may judge from its results, superior to what has been adopted in similar institutions of other countries. The following facts would appear to confirm this position.

The Foundling Hospital of London, from its establishment in 1739 to December 1757, only put out one hundred and seven children, after incurring the enormous expence of one hundred and sixty-six thousand pounds.

In 1791, Sir John Blaquire stated in the Irish House of Commons, that of nineteen thousand four hundred and twenty infants received, during the preceding ten years, into the Foundling Hospital of Dublin, seventeen thousand four hundred and twenty had died; and that of two thousand one hundred and eighty, which had been admitted during 1790, only one hundred and eighty-seven were then living.

In a German Hospital, during twenty years experience, under an expence of twenty thousand dollars, not one individual arrived at manhood. At Cassel, only ten out of one hundred and seventy-one lived to seventeen

Digitized by Google

years of age. At Rome, one in twenty-seven reached manhood; and at Vienna, one in nineteen.

Liancourt, in his report to the National Assembly of France, states, that two-thirds of the children admitted into the Foundling Hospitals of Paris, die within the first twelve-months.

In consequence of these facts, many have disputed the utility of institutions of this nature. Lord Kaimes says, that "of all the mischiefs that have been engendered by over anxiety for the poor, none have proved more fatal than foundling hospitals." And Malthus contends, that if the children received into foundling hospitals had been left to the management of their parents, taking the chance of all the difficulties in which they might have been involved, a much greater portion of them would have reached manhood and become useful members of society.

After leaving the Foundling Hospital, I dined at the residence of Mr. K——, to celebrate the first anniversary of the birth of his child; when out of compliment to the parents,

Digitized by Google

I drank its health. Here I was taxed with irregularity; as it is contrary to the custom of the country to drink a child's health on its first anniversary.

On Friday, the 25th of April, the people of Moscow were busily occupied in preparations for the ensuing Sunday, or Palm Sunday; that is, in providing themselves with palm branches to be used in the ceremonial of the day, as commemorative of our Saviour's entry into Jerusalem. For the want of real palm, they substitute branches of willow, or artificial ones, of paper or other materials, which are made by the nuns of the Voskrosenski Convent, in the Kremlin.

At the church in Galitzin's Hospital, the service for Palm Sunday commenced on the preceding evening, and I was induced, with a friend, to attend it. On our way we had to pass a most extensive procession of carriages, of all descriptions, amounting to not less than three thousand equipages, together with an immense number of people on horseback, this being one of the gayest ceremonies of the season. The whole of these collected about four

Digitized by Google

in the afternoon, in a spacious place called the Krasnoi Plosched, where the statues of Minin and Pojarsky stand; from hence they proceeded through the Voskrosenski Gate, in direction of the Devitchey-poley, the whole forming a double line of nearly four miles in extent. This procession originated in an ancient custom of the people going to this part of the city to purchase their palm branches.

On arriving at Galitzin's Hospital, we were entertained with tea, at the apartments of Dr. A——, the physician to the institution, having the pleasure at the same time of being introduced to the ladies of his family, who I found particularly interesting and beautiful.

My power of discriminating female beauty has so often been called in question, and I have so frequently been told, that it matters not to me, whether a woman be handsome or not, that a few words in explanation may not be mal-apropos.

In this respect as well as under other circumstances, where my power of obtaining a knowledge of external things is limited by the deficiency of that which, Addison tells us, is

Digitized by Google

" the most perfect and most delightful of all our senses," imagination fills up the *hiatus*.

When introduced to a lady, if I find her conversation sensible and refined, and her opinions expressed in an agreeable tone of voice, I immediately assume that other qualities, more or less, harmonize, and that her personal attractions may also be pleasing. Imagination now commences, and finds no difficulty in heightening the picture so as to paint her even as beautiful, since we naturally wish to make the object we admire as perfect as possible. If, however, on the contrary, there is a harshness of voice, a want of graceful and correct diction, or vulgarity of ideas, my inferences are proportionately unfavourable; and were she actually beautiful as an angel, no such impression would be excited in my mind.

It is true I am liable to much error in forming opinions from such data; but if, in addition, an opportunity is afforded me of feeling the hand, and touching, ever so lightly, the features of the face, I fancy that I can, from their softness, delicacy, or contour, arrive at

Digitized by Google

conclusions so certain, that I am vain enough to imagine they have not often proved erroneous.

The service which was performed in the church, did not appear materially to differ from the regular service, except in the addition of the ceremony of blessing and distributing the palms, for which there was a most pious scramble. When they had received them, each person lighted a small wax taper, which he either attached to the palm-branch or held in the same hand with it, so as to leave the right hand at liberty for making the sign of the cross, which was frequently done, as well as numerous bows, often so low as to strike audibly the ground with the forehead.

The next morn ushered in Palm Sunday and Passion Week, the whole of which is, by the Greek Church, devoted to the performance of religious duties, and held as so rigid a fast, that no religious person will even eat fish, partaking only of sufficient farinaceous food, oil, and vegetables, to support the necessities of nature: nay, some, I am assured, will pass the entire week without eating. The sick

Digitized by Google

and aged, however, are exempt from these observances.

This season is known by the name of the "Terrible Week," and while it continues, no shops are allowed to be open, except a few, by express permission, for the sale of provisions. Visiting is generally interrupted. I had the honour, however, of dining with two families during the week, in one of which the lady of the house, without any apparent reason, begged my pardon. I afterwards learnt that it is customary at this time, for individuals to ask forgiveness of their friends for all previous offences that might have been committed, or imagined to be committed.

On Good Friday the people assembled, at two in the afternoon, in the different churches, to witness a representation of the burial of our Saviour.

On Easter morning, immediately after the midnight hour had struck, all the bells in the city, including the great Ivan-Veleki, burst forth their summons to the inhabitants to repair to the different churches, to hear the

Digitized by Google

service preparatory to the supposed resurrection. Towards the conclusion of this service, the whole congregation, with the priests at their head, bearing the cross and incense, and each holding a wax taper in his hand, march three times in procession round the church, as if they were looking for our Saviour. While this is passing, the image of our Saviour is removed from the tomb, where it had been deposited on the Friday, to the front of the altar. After the lapse of a few minutes, the doors of the sanctuary are thrown open, when the priests come forth, exclaiming, three times, "Christ is risen!" The people now eagerly advance to kiss the cross, at which time each presents the priest with an egg, or a piece of money, whichever suits his means or inclination. This concluded, the whole retire to their respective homes.

At six o'clock the morning service commences, when each person brings with him a cake and a quantity of curds, the latter made into a pyramidal form, and marked with one or more figures of the cross. These, at the end of the service, are blessed by the priest, who

Digitized by Google

either takes off a portion of the cake for himself, or receives a small piece of money in lieu of it. With the consecrated food, the pious Christian then returns home, and enjoys his breakfast, after which he is at liberty to make any compensation to his stomach which he pleases, for the rigidity of his previous fasting. The lower orders avail themselves so freely of this permission, that the results not unfrequently prove fatal.

The above is the only service of this happy day, the remainder of which is devoted to pleasure and enjoyment, visiting their friends, and driving about the city with every variety of equipage: even the tinker and the tailor sport their carriages on the occasion. The bells are ringing the whole of the day, while groups of people animate the streets, presenting eggs of various kinds and colours to their friends, and saluting them with the joyful tidings of, "Christos voskos," "Christ is risen," answered by the equally gratulatory response, "Voustinno voskos," "truly he is risen."

What adds to the brilliancy of the day is,

Digitized by Google

that the middle and lower classes appear in new clothes, and the servants in their gayest liveries. Marriages, however, are not allowed to be solemnized until the following week;—but every one appears happy enough in all conscience; and such an addition might be incompatible with the weakness of a mortal brain, and crack it with excess of joy.

On this occasion I attended the service of the reformed church, and then occupied the remainder of the day in visiting and congratulating my Russian friends; nor did I forget the customary salute on the hands of the ladies, which was returned by a kiss on the cheek or forehead. I believe, however, this ceremony is not expected from foreigners; but I was anxious to show the utmost respect, as well as my readiness to conform with the manners and customs of the country. Perhaps it is a question as yet undecided, whether the traveller in a foreign country should observe his own national peculiarities, or submit them to those of the people amongst whom he may be sojourning.

The Easter festivities continue throughout

Digitized by Google

the whole week, during which time the lower orders amuse themselves with wooden hills, and exhibitions of various kinds, which are held on the Boulevards at the Padnavinsky. Among other curiosities to be seen at this place, during the present season, was a mermaid, represented on the outside of the booth, as swimming in the sea; but, on entering, you were surprised to find a wooden body, with wings attached to it; that part which most appertained to the fish, made of tin, worked in the manner of scales; while the head, body, and arms, were covered with wax, and the face well rouged.

On the Monday after Easter, business returned into its ordinary channel, with this exception—that, during the first three days, all the various remnants are collected together in the respective shops, and sold at a low rate.

On this day I had the pleasure of being introduced to Dr. Lyall, a gentleman whose literary productions relative to this city have since excited so much attention and interest.

On Tuesday, the 1st of May, (O. S.) there

Digitized by Google

was a promenade, in carriages, in the Sakolnika Wood, with a great display of beauty and fashion. On this occasion, you see large parties dining in their tents, attended by military and other music, with gypsies dancing, and a variety of other entertainments. This promenade is said to have originated from an entertainment given by Peter the Great on this day (according to a German custom) to his foreign artificers, who were chiefly of that nation, when the nobility and populace were attracted as spectators. In time, it became a regular annual promenade.*

At this time Moscow was agitated by the horrid report of a woman, who had been apprehended for eating (as it was said, by her own confession,) twenty-four children. We afterwards were informed, that the report was only a tub thrown out to divert the minds of the people, during the period of casting a large bell, intended for the town of Cazan; a super-

* Sakolnika, in the Russian language, signifies hawk, and from there being an imperial hawkery near the above wood, just without the city gate, both these places have hence derived their names.

Digitized by Google

stitious opinion prevailing, that the bell cannot be properly cast if public attention is at the time directed to it!

It may here be worthy of remark, that mothers and nurses in Russia do not like to have their children admired too much: this is what they call casting an evil eye upon them. On this account they will often, before allowing you to see them, desire you to turn from them, and spit three times on the ground, with a view of ejecting the evil spirit;—or if you happen to have seen them without this precaution, the mother turns her head aside, and performs the operation instead of you.

There are few people in the world more influenced by superstitious feelings than the Russians, either as respect their religious constitution, or the more ordinary occurrences of private life. Of this characteristic tendency, the above anecdotes, as well as a variety of other instances that have been related in these pages, are illustrations: I shall, however, avail myself of the present opportunity of entering into farther details on the subject.

The following instance has, perhaps, scarcely

Digitized by Google

a parallel, except in the fanaticism of the disciples of Joanna Southcote:—About three years since, a girl, thirteen years of age, commenced digging with her hands under a tree near the church of the village of Gooseiver, in the neighbourhood of Moscow, in consequence of communications said to have been received in various dreams, that she would find, in the first instance a candle; secondly, a post; then an image, which was to be placed in a niche of the church left purposely for it; and, lastly, a spring of water, that would become the source of a mighty river. The nature of this supernatural communication becoming known, immense crowds flocked to the spot, to witness the results of her labours; amongst whom were many sick people, who expected to be relieved from their infirmities by drinking, or washing their sores with the muddy water that collected during her operations, the ground being composed of argillaceous strata, with much moisture from rain. In the course of her proceedings, the candle and post made their appearance; but the police then interfered, and prevented the

Digitized by Google

continuation of the farce, in consequence of the discovery of collusion between her parents and the priest and clerk of the village, who had devised this extraordinary mode of giving celebrity and wealth to a poor country church. It is generally thought that the affair terminated in all the parties, including the priest, being knouted and banished to Siberia.

Another instance of the superstition of the Russian peasantry occurred about the same time. The Countess Bobrinski having directed the felling of an old oak tree on her domain, the workmen, after a few blows upon its trunk, observed, to their astonishment, a reddish liquor flow out. This they conceived to be blood; the report soon spread throughout the neighbourhood, and thousands flocked to the spot, who, regarding the phenomenon as a miracle, proceeded to hang the tree with garlands and images; the sick were brought to it to be healed, and various portions of the wood carried away as sacred relics. The countess persisting, notwithstanding the sanctity of this venerable oak, in her determination to have it prostrated on the ground, the

Digitized by Google

peasants (for superstition will give courage even to slaves) determined to oppose the execution of her orders; and it was not until a body of soldiers were called out to disperse them, that the tree was cut down, and tranquillity restored to the neighbourhood.

In their worship, the Russians profess not to address any image that is carved or graven, but only such as are painted in oil-colours on wood, the artist lying prostrate on his face while engaged in the divine occupation! There is something very ludicrous in the mode of obtaining a saint from the manufacturer; they do not purchase him, but call it making an exchange, or buying the gold and silver with which it is ornamented; these holy personages, however, are regularly exposed like other wares of trade. The manner in which the affair is conducted is as follows: The person who wants a saint, after making his selection, lays on the counter what he thinks an adequate sum, which, if the manufacturer does not consider sufficient, is put back to him: he then, from time to time, makes additions, until the other is satisfied.

Digitized by Google

Such is the requisition in which these images are held, that no apartment, not even a stable, is without its patron saint.

Much deference is paid to omens. The Russians having their lucky and unlucky days, few of them will commence a journey, or undertake any business of importance, on a Monday. Friday is also with them a black day. If, on leaving home, the first person a Russian meets happens to be a clergyman, it is ten to one but he turns back, to obviate the ill luck of passing him; or, if he happens to have passed previous to seeing him, he immediately turns round, and spits three times on the ground.

If a hare crosses his path, or a pigeon flies athwart his window, it is an ill omen. Many families will not allow salt-cellars upon the table, lest the salt should be spilled, but have the latter placed on the cloth in a pyramidal form. I discovered this omen one day at dinner, by finding my bread very salt.

On a Russian changing his residence, he assembles his family and servants, when they all sit down in a circle, and rise at the

Digitized by Google

same instant: this is considered as taking leave of the house. On entering into possession of a new house, or on returning to it after a long absence, his friends send him a present of bread and salt, as a welcome: nay, even the governors of provinces are in this way received on taking possession of their governments. A friend of mine one day, after a sumptuous dinner, was, during the dessert, invited to partake of a black loaf, which was placed on the table, with a salt-cellar upon it: he naturally declined so uninviting a morsel; but his host insisting on his compliance, he was agreeably disappointed by finding under this form, a delicious sponge-cake that had been sent by the landlord of the house to his tenant, in conformity with the above custom.

On the 21st of May the weather was so fine and warm, that we were enabled to dine in the open air. This is a gratification to which one strong objection exists in Moscow during the summer time—the great abundance of gnats, whose bites are venomous. The cantharis, or blistering-fly, is also sometimes

Digitized by Google

seen in Moscow, when the wind has been long blowing from the south. It is very common in the Ukraine, so as to constitute an article of exportation. Russia abounds also with many of the serpent tribe, but few of them are venomous.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

French at Moscow—Russian Army—Institution for Officers' Widows—Captain Cochrane—The Author's intention of visiting Siberia—His friends' remonstrances against it—His motives explained—Interview with the Governor-General relative to his views—Mrs. Cochrane—Visit to the prison—Prince Dolgorouky's horn music—Arrangements for leaving Moscow.

So many detailed accounts have appeared respecting the highly important part this city was destined to sustain during the late invasion of the French, that little additional information remained for myself to glean relative to this interesting subject.

What most impressed me, however, was the wonderful confidence with which the minds of the people were inspired by the ingenious bulletins of the governor, Count Rostopchin, and which were admirably calculated to operate upon their feelings and prejudices.

Digitized by Google

The following can scarcely fail to be read with interest.

"BULLETIN.

"*Head Quarters, between Gjat and Mojaisk.*

"Our van-guard is at Gjat; the situation occupied by our army is exceedingly strong, and there His Serene Highness the Prince intends to give the enemy battle. We are now equal in numbers, and within two days we shall be further reinforced by twenty thousand men. Our troops are all Russians, of one religion, subjects of one Emperor, defending the temples of God, their wives, their children, and the graves of their fathers. The enemy, on the contrary, fight for their subsistence, and die in the act of plundering. If they lose but one battle, they will all disperse, and their names will be forgotten.

"You know that I am informed of every thing that passes in Moscow. Yesterday there was something improper done, and which certainly deserves reproof. Two Germans, who came to exchange money, were followed,

Digitized by Google

beaten, and received so much injury from the people, that one of them nearly lost his life. They took them for spies, which ought to have been examined into; but that was my business, and you know I would not in such a case spare my own countrymen. Where is the merit, for a hundred of you to beat a meagre Frenchman, or a perriwigged, smoked German? What inclination have you to thus dirty your hands? Those who act in such a manner, will not defend themselves in case of need. When you think you observe a spy, then bring him to me, but do not strike him, and thus bring a reproach upon your country. We must annihilate* the French army, not bruise the eyes of such poor wretches. The wounded have been brought hither; they are placed in the Palace of Golovin; I have seen them; I have given them to eat and to drink, and put them to bed. They have fought for you, therefore you must not neglect them, but visit and comfort them. You feed criminals,

*The original word signifies literally "to bury in the ground without ceremony," as if the body was that of a brute animal.

Digitized by Google

but these are the Emperor's faithful servants, and our friends.—How can we refuse them our assistance.

" (Signed) COUNT ROSTOPCHIN."

" BULLETIN.

" Two couriers, dispatched from the field of battle, have brought from the Commander-in-Chief of the army the following intelligence.

" ' Yesterday, the 26th, was fought a very hot and bloody battle. The Russians, with the assistance of God, did not retreat a single step, notwithstanding the enemy fought against them with desperation. Trusting in the Lord, and the sacred relics of Moscow, I hope to-morrow to fight them again with renewed vigour.

" ' The losses of the enemy are incalculable; their orders were to take no prisoners, (none whatever,) and that the French must either conquer or perish. If we to day, with the

Digitized by Google

assistance of God, once more repulse them; then the wretch, and his wicked followers, must perish by hunger, fire, or sword.'

"I send to the army four thousand men of our new recruits, ammunition for two hundred and fifty pieces of cannon, and provisions. My true believers, be not uneasy; the blood of our brethren flows for the deliverance of our country; we ourselves are ready to reinforce the army if necessary. God will strengthen us, and a grave awaits our perfidious enemy in the fields of Russia.

"(Signed) COUNT ROSTOPCHIN.

"*Moscow, August 27th*, (O. S.) 1812."

"BULLETIN.

"His Serene Highness, the Prince, in order to unite earlier with the troops marching to join him, has passed Mojaisk, and posted himself in a strong situation, where the enemy cannot suddenly attack him. Forty-eight

Digitized by Google

pieces of cannon, with ammunition, have been sent to him from hence. The Prince declares that he will defend Moscow to the last drop of his blood, and that he will continue to fight the enemy in the streets.

"Do not, my friends, regard the shutting of our courts of justice for the present: we must close those proceedings, that we may settle our accounts with the enemy. If the trial should come, I may stand in need of our youths, both of town or country. My signal will be given two days prior. At present it is not necessary; I am therefore silent. A hatchet will do very well; a hay-fork also will not be amiss; but a three-pronged fork will be best of all. A Frenchman is no heavier than a sheaf of rye. To-morrow afternoon I shall bear the image of the Virgin Mary of Iviria to the wounded soldiers at Catharine's Hospital; we will there consecrate the water, and they will soon recover. One of my eyes has been disordered, but I now see with both.

"(Signed) COUNT ROSTOPCHIN.

"*Moscow, August 30,* (O. S.) 1812".

Digitized by Google

"BULLETIN.

"Brethren! our forces are numerous, and ready to lay down their lives in defence of their country. We will not suffer these miscreants to enter Moscow, but we ourselves must assist and do our duty. It would be a heavy sin to abandon our countrymen. Moscow is our mother, she has nourished and enriched you.

"I call upon you, in the name of the Blessed Virgin, to defend the temples of the Lord, Moscow, and the Russian empire. Arm yourselves, each with what he can, both horse and foot; take with you bread only for three days. Go with the cross; take also, the sacred banners from the churches; and with these ensigns assemble immediately on the three hills. I will be with you, and we will together destroy the enemy. Glory in the highest to those who persevere—fame immortal to those who fall—but, woe at the day of judgment to those who excuse themselves.

"(Signed) COUNT ROSTOPCHIN.

"*Moscow, August* 31*st*, (O. S.) 1812."

Digitized by Google

Another contrivance for amusing the minds of the inhabitants at this critical moment, was the preparation of an immense balloon, under the direction of a Dr. Schmidt, which it was reported would infallibly destroy the French army. To carry this measure into effect, a requisition was made of more than a hundred milliner girls. The French army, however, made its appearance before this wonderful machine could be got in readiness. It has generally been imagined that the preparation of this balloon was a mere pretext, under cover of which the different arrangements for setting fire to the city were expedited. This surmise is evidently confirmed by the proceedings of the court-martial held by the French, upon the persons who were taken up in the act of spreading destruction throughout the city; and which also leaves no doubt of the act being the result of a preconcerted plan, on the part of the Russian government.*

After the occupation of the city by the enemy, his foraging parties were from time to time so

* This interesting document is given in the Appendix H.

Digitized by Google

harassed by the Cossacks, and other Russian troops, that little or no supplies could be obtained from the surrounding country. Considerable resources, however, still remained within the city, derivable from the public and private stores, as well as the many well stocked fishponds and vegetable gardens in its immediate vicinity; these at length beginning to fail, recourse was had to the immense number of pigeons and crows, with which the city abounds; the former being regarded as sacred birds, and therefore especially protected by the inhabitants. At length, they were compelled to commence their retreat; an event which was communicated by the following bulletin:—

"The enemy, pressed and daily routed by our troops, have been compelled to evacuate Moscow, on the 11th of October, (O. S.) yet in flying he meditated to wound, by new insults, the pious Russian people, destroying by mines the Kremlin and churches wherein repose the bodies of saints. But God is wonderful in his works! though part of the walls of

Digitized by Google

the Kremlin, and nearly the whole of the buildings have been blown into the air, or destroyed by fire, yet the cathedrals and churches containing the sacred relics remain entire and uninjured. A mark of the mercy of God towards the Emperor and the Russian empire.

"*Moscow, October* 12*th*, (O. S.) 1812."

On this memorable occasion, many individuals are said to have realized considerable sums, by purchasing from the soldiers of the invading army, the plunder which they had appropriated to themselves; as immense bundles of Russian bank-notes, which were gladly exchanged for coins of any description.

I shall not attempt an account of the aggravated sufferings they afterwards sustained, since these are well known to every reader.

The exemplary military qualities displayed by the Russian army during this invasion of their country, as well as in the subsequent campaigns, has not only effaced all previous stigma or prejudice with respect to it, but elevated its reputation to a height of glory

Digitized by Google

scarcely surpassed by any other nation in the world.

Independent of the enthusiasm excited on all hands, to repel an unprovoked and apparently overwhelming invasion, this high character of the Russian army may in great measure be attributed to the manner in which its soldiers are levied, and which places in its ranks, only a choice selection of the peasantry of the country. The following is the mode in which their levies are made.

The number of men wanted being divided amongst the different governments, its various subdivisions and villages, the whole are taken by lot, upon the principle of our militia ballots. After the ballot, however, the intended recruit is rejected unless, on inspection, he is found of proper stature, and perfectly sound in every respect; these points being ascertained, a tuft is immediately cut off from the fore part of the head, which is the sign of approbation; otherwise he is shorn in a similar way behind, and started off without a word, as unworthy of the honour of being "written a soldier." The service is at first very obnoxious to the new

Digitized by Google

ballots; but they soon not only become reconciled, but attached to it; for although the pay is small, many advantages accrue to them; in the first place they become free at the moment of enrolment, and render free any woman they may choose to marry, and after twenty-five years service are allowed to retire as freemen. Their sons are, however, attached to the army as soldiers.

The pay of the lower ranks of the army is as follows:—

	Roubles.	Copecks.	
A common soldier . .	3	13½	per month.
A grenadier	3	32	do.
An under officer . . .	5	22	do.
A cadet serving for the rank of officer . .	12	44¼	do.

They are allowed in addition, one pood, or thirty-six pounds (English) of flour, and about three-sixteenths of an English bushel of buck wheat per month; ammunition and clothing once in two years; canteens, buttons, and other brass and tin materials, once in eight years; two pair of boots, with two pair of spare soles, and eighteen arshines of linen, every year.

Digitized by Google

The officers are obliged to commence their services in the ranks; after which they advance according as they may possess interest, or extraordinary merit. As military title is in this country the only ground of precedence, it becomes desirable for all who aim at public distinction to obtain this rank; it can, however be acquired by civil as well as military occupation; so that all the first civilians are generals; this, however, gives no standing in the army itself, to attain which the due gradations of military service must have been gone through.

A major-general of infantry receives in net pay only, two thousand one hundred roubles per annum, equal to eighty-seven pounds ten shillings English money: he has, however, for table money fifteen hundred or two thousand roubles more; and is allowed eight soldiers as servants, for whom he receives flour from the crown. He is entitled also to military quarters; and if he happens to attain the command of a regiment, has many perquisites, which materially improve his income. Independently of these advantages he has the

Digitized by Google

chance, in the event of distinguishing himself, of obtaining an *arrende*, or grant of an estate, either for a term of years, or in perpetuity, the lease of which, in the former case, is generally renewable to his family, or at least made so without much difficulty.

The pay of a colonel is one thousand two hundred roubles, and of a major eight hundred; and which, as arrendes are not granted to officers of these ranks, is very inadequate to their necessities. Occasionally, however, a colonel becomes the commandant of a regiment, in which case his advantages exceed those of a major-general without a regiment.

Military men in Russia, cannot be arrested for debt,—but a portion (one fifth) of their pay, may by a tedious process, be appropriated for the benefit of their creditors.

Officers have no half pay, although they occasionally receive pensions. At the end of a war they may quit the service, and return to it, if they please, at the commencement of a new one, with their former rank.

There is in Moscow an institution for the benefit of the poor widows of officers, which

Digitized by Google

is under the patronage of the Dowager Empress, and the more immediate direction of M. Narishkin, a senator of the city, who makes it his study to promote the happiness of its inmates.

The building accommodates three hundred widows with their children, and has gardens attached, which afford an ample supply of vegetables, as well as agreeable promenades. There are also three hundred out pensioners, who receive each one hundred rubles per annum. Fifty of the residents are permitted to study medicine, when after a year's attendance at the hospital, they undergo an examination, which if satisfactory, entitles them to receive a gold cross, and licence to practice as upper nurses, under the title of Sœurs de Charité, the emolument from which is entirely appropriated to their own advantage. These members of the institution are held in extraordinary respect, set at a separate table, and provided with four dishes at dinner instead of three.

The other residents occupy themselves as they please, and for their own exclusive ad-

Digitized by Google

vantage, although they are provided with cloathes, board, lodging, and every other necessary free of expence.

The children are educated with every possible care, until the boys attain the age of nine, and the girls that of twelve; they are then obliged to seek occupation, or an asylum, elsewhere.

The qualification necessary for admission is, that the husband of the candidate must have held the rank of an officer for more than ten years.

On Saturday, May 31st, I was honoured with a visit from General Fonbrien, accompanied by the interesting traveller Captain Cochrane, whose arrival from Siberia I had been for some time past daily anticipating, and from whom I hoped to elicit a variety of particulars relating to my own proposed journey into that country. Notwithstanding my intention of penetrating into Siberia was loudly condemned by my friends, yet my resolution was so deliberately taken and firmly fixed, long before I ventured to announce my determination, that I should not have been deterred by

Digitized by Google

any arguments that might have been urged against it. I reflected in particular, that what had proved practicable to others, might not be impossible to myself.

Before leaving Petersburg I carefully concealed my intentions from my nearest friends, and even when his excellency Sir Charles Bagot, questioned me as to the direction I proposed to take from Moscow, I avoided the mention of any definite extent to my journey, simply admitting that it would be eastward, in the direction of Cazan; when he was pleased to offer me his assistance on all occasions. I may add, that his excellency's opinion served to confirm my own, since he expressed himself convinced, that as a private individual, I should receive every possible attention from the chiefs of the various governments I might pass through; and that he did not consider it even necessary to apply to the minister of the interior for letters of especial protection, as some of my friends had recommended me to do.

When my intention first began to transpire at Moscow, every one made it his business to demonstrate the madness and absurdity of

Digitized by Google

attempting so dangerous, uninteresting, and disagreeable a journey, in a country where, as respected myself in particular, nothing was to be either seen or heard! In short, the name of Siberia, probably from early associations, seemed connected in their minds only with sentiments of horror. Not a stranger to whom I was casually introduced, but made it the first object of his conversation to fish into my plans and endeavour to dissuade me from their prosecution. It was kindly meant, but my determination was inflexible, and these urgencies only produced the trite reply that "time would shew how far my views were chimerical."

And, what it may be again asked, by his English reader, could be the object proposed by the author, in thus persisting in views so contradictory to the sentiments of all his friends? I admit that the desire of meeting with novelty, constituted one of my leading motives.

> "For such the bounteous providence of heaven,
> In every breast implanting this desire;
> Of objects new and strange to urge us on,

Digitized by Google

With unremitted labours to pursue,
Those sacred stores that wait the ripening soul
In truth's exhaustless bosom. What need words
To paint its power? For this the daring youth,
Breaks from his weeping mother's anxious arms,
In foreign climes to rove———."

I had formerly visited a great part of southern Europe, as well as the continent of North America, and was desirous of making myself acquainted with the manners and customs of a country, with which the inhabitants of Europe have hitherto had but little communication, and at best a very imperfect knowledge of; a country deemed as yet so barbarous, as to be hardly entering within the pale of civilization, and in whose tents the stranger could scarce abide with safety. Relying, however, on the general similarity of human nature, its various differences being the secondary effects of early habits or prejudice, I felt no apprehension of trusting myself in the midst of such a people, convinced that a conformity with their manners and customs, and an avoidance of ridicule and opposition to their prejudices, would conciliate their feelings, and ensure their protection.

Digitized by Google

I was farther stimulated by a desire to prove to the world, that notwithstanding my personal defects, I was capable of overcoming difficulties which to them might appear impossible.

On the following day, June 1st, I had the pleasure of accompanying Captain Cochrane to both the commandant, and the governor-general of Moscow, the latter of whom informed me, contrary to the expectations of Captain Cochrane, that it was not necessary for me to obtain any especial protection, or licence, from the minister of the interior, to enable me to penetrate into Siberia, since the Siberian governments were, as related to these points, conducted on precisely the same principles as those in other parts of the empire: and when I stated, in reply to his inquiry as to the proposed extent of my journey, that I wished to take out my licence for post horses to Irkoutsk, he gave me to understand that I might there obtain an extension in any direction I pleased, an assurance which set my mind at ease in this respect, and which I deemed a sufficient authority to act upon.

Digitized by Google

Captain Cochrane had been accompanied from Kamschatka by an interesting young lady, a native of that country, to whom he was happily united in the bonds of matrimony; and as he was anxious to shew her the wonders of this great city, I had the pleasure of attending her, with another lady and gentleman, to the Kremlin, where we mounted the tower of Ivan-Veleki. We naturally expected that she would have expressed her admiration with much warmth; she appeared pleased with what she saw, but not at all surprised. In a day or two after we attended her to the theatre, the amusement of which it was conceived she would be enabled to appreciate, from her being well acquainted with the Russian language. She paid much attention, and seemed interested, particularly with an entertaining vaudeville, named the Parrots, at which she laughed heartily; but although this was the first regular dramatic representation she had ever witnessed, we did not notice that expression of astonishment which we had anticipated.

This lady, who was represented as very handsome, although a native of so distant a

Digitized by Google

country, and only in her fifteenth year, was by no means unpolished or awkward in her manners; she possessed, it is true, much diffidence, which served only to render her the more interesting; in short her parents had been conversant with the more civilized parts of the empire, and had educated her according to their customs.

On the 6th I accompanied a party to the Prison, named the Ostrog, which is constructed on the plan of Howard, and kept in admirable order. At this time it contained within its walls about four hundred and fifty prisoners, but occasionally the number is much exceeded. The more general punishments resorted to in this place, are knouting, and banishment to Siberia for life, unless strong interest, or some imperial act of grace shortens the period of exile. We examined the knout, and the mode of using it, and its effects demonstrated on a a *plaster wall*, when each blow uniformly brought forth a portion of the composition. The handle of this instrument was about two feet in length, and divided in the middle by a leathern joint, so as to allow the one half to

Digitized by Google

swing backward and forward with the lash. This latter part was about four feet in length, having a ring of three inches in diameter attached to its extremity, to which was added a thong of hardened leather about the size of a gaiter strap. With this instrument, I am assured, the executioner, (who is always a reprieved criminal,) seldom fails to take a portion from out of the victim's back at each blow.

Horrible as this appears, the situation of criminals, both as respects their prison treatment and the severity of punishment, has been materially ameliorated during the present emperor's reign. Nor are any of the exiles now sent off without adequate supplies of clothing.

On the evening of Sunday, the 8th, after dining at a friend's in the country, we visited the pleasure gardens of Prince Dolgorouky, at Petrofsky Rasamoffsky. To this venerable gentleman, now eighty years of age, and his daughter, the Princess Gerchikoff, we had the honour of being introduced. I had here, for the first time, the gratification of hearing the

Digitized by Google

fine national horn music, the softness of which exceeded every idea I had preconceived with respect to it. The tones which were produced could only be compared to, but at the same time greatly exceeded, the most melodious notes of the organ. The prince's band consisted of twenty-two musicians, each playing three notes; the bands of this kind of music, however, more commonly comprise from forty to sixty horns, each being confined to a single note.

The summer was now rapidly advancing, and the weather had become extremely warm, although still variable, particularly towards evening, when we generally experienced a heavy thunder storm, which contributed materially to cool the air. I had now got through all the troublesome forms, required by the police, to enable me to take out my licence for post horses to Irkoutsk, and determined to abridge as far as possible my further stay in Moscow.

For this licence, to travel a distance of five thousand three hundred and fifty versts, equal to three thousand five hundred and sixty-

Digitized by Google

seven English miles, I was charged about nine pounds sterling, or two hundred and fourteen roubles, being at the rate of four copecks per verst for two horses; and I was afterward charged at the respective post houses ten copecks per verst for this number of horses; to which the charge was limited, notwithstanding the driver put three, and frequently four, into the carriage.

I had travelled from St. Petersburg to Moscow in the diligence; but I found this mode of conveyance did not extend farther into the interior, and that the only government substitute was the telega, or post cart, a small, light machine upon four wheels, and without springs. I was induced, however, to prefer travelling in my own equipage, and was on the point of purchasing a britchka, when Captain Cochrane arrived, and made me an offer of the equipage which he had brought new from Cazan, where he was compelled to abandon his sledge, in consequence of the snow roads having disappeared, and to whom it now became unnecessary, as he proposed taking the diligence to St. Petersburg. I also engaged the same Tartar postil-

Digitized by Google

lion as had accompanied him from Cazan, and was thus at once nearly fitted out for my journey.

Dr. Lyall, for whose friendly attentions I shall ever feel indebted, did me the favour to assist in procuring a stock of medicine, not only with a view to my own relief, should sickness invade me in a country where medical aid might be sought for in vain, but also to enable me to be instrumental in affording assistance to others; an expectation in which I was not a little encouraged by the smattering of physic which I had acquired during my residence at Edinburgh, several of the medical classes of whose excellent university I had studiously attended.

My next arrangement was important; the necessary one with my bankers, who paid the kindest attention not only to my pecuniary arrangements, but also to every other comfort.

The money I took with me was principally in five rouble notes. I had, however, various bags containing coins of different values; for instance, No. 1, one hundred one rouble silver

Digitized by Google

pieces; No. 2, one hundred eighty copeck pieces; No. 3, one hundred forty copeck pieces, and No. 4, one hundred twenty copeck pieces; these latter being of the value of two pence English.

In the event of supplies being required, my kind bankers made such arrangements, that I had only to write from any town, and whatever sum I wanted would immediately be forwarded by post, on my paying a trifling per centage for government security.

I was provided also with tea and sugar for the whole journey; six bottles of brandy and as many of French wine, and always took care, at each town, to lay in sufficient bread and meat to serve until our arrival at the next; and thus, having also with me a tea-pot, cups, &c. &c., I was quite independent of the accidental and inadequate entertainment the post-houses could furnish, with the exception of hot water.

Nothing now remained but to bid adieu to the kind friends from whom I had been receiving the most unbounded hospitality and attention during my residence in Moscow, and

Digitized by Google

these, I have the highest gratification in boasting of it, were so numerous as to occupy a great portion of my time. To the whole of them collectively, I now beg to repeat the unabated expression of gratitude, with which my heart was then, and ever will be, actuated, by an experience of their warm and disinterested friendship, to one whom they were led to consider as a helpless and unfortunate stranger.

"Tho' keen is the sorrow and sad is the tear,
From the scene of our joys when we part;
And cast a last look on the friends that are dear,
Or the still dearest friends of our heart.
But ah! what a desert that bosom must prove,
That knows not the feelings of friendship and love."

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

Description of Moscow—Its situation—Early history—Magnitude—Population—Kremlin—Kitai-gorod—Beloi-gorod—Tartar Town.

BEFORE I take leave of Moscow, I must present my readers with a brief description of that celebrated city.

The city of Moscow is situated upon the river Moskva, in the same latitude as Berwick-upon-Tweed. It occupies three distinct ridges on the left bank of the river; on the right bank, also, it has various streets containing many fine private habitations, and which altogether bear much the same proportion to the town in general, as Southwark does to London.

The river, as it approaches the town, makes a fine sweep along the base of the Sparrow

Digitized by Google

Hills. It is at the wooden bridge three hundred and forty two feet in breadth; its ordinary height in summer seven feet; in the spring floods, however, it generally rises to nearly four times that height, and in the year 1808 to even thirty-two feet; the height of the bank on the city, or north side, is twenty-seven feet, while on the south side it is only twenty-three.

Moscow dates its origin in the twelfth century, and is said to have been founded by Jouri Vladimerovitch. The old chronicles describe it as a village where that prince kept his favourite mistress. This induced him to build a house there, which example many of his courtiers following, the result was an immense city, destined to become the great *entrepôt* of European and Asiatic commerce in the north.

Following the line of the outer rampart, Moscow nearly equals London in circumference; the district, however, between the outer and inner ramparts is chiefly taken up with gardens, and but thinly covered with houses. The population has been estimated by

Digitized by Google

some at four hundred thousand, but this is probably an exaggerated account; it perhaps, may more safely be estimated at half that number.

That part of the town which is termed the Kremlin is its more important division, and the object of the most reverential feelings of the Russians. It was the nucleus round which the bulk of the city was formed; it is also the depository of the imperial diadems, and the crowns of many conquered kingdoms, — in short of every thing connected with the historical illustrations of the empire. Here the rites of the Greek church are celebrated by its chiefest dignitaries in the great national temple, open alike to the emperor and the meanest of his slaves. In it repose the bones of temporal sovereigns and spiritual patriarchs, (scarcely in their time less powerful,) and not a few of the undecomposed corpses of these saints still remain, as standing miracles, for the establishing of faith and the confounding of scepticism.

The Kremlin is surrounded by a high crenated wall flanked by lofty towers; it has four principal gates, over each of which is an

Digitized by Google

elevated tower or spire of modern date, not very unlike some anomalous Gothic steeples which are to be met with in England. As a fortress, it might have served sufficiently to resist the incursions of the Tartars; but could make only a weak defence against the cannon shot of an European army.

On the eastern side of the Kremlin, is the Khitai-gorod or Chinese Town, surrounded by a wall, and flanked at moderate distances by towers. Here the greater part of the commerce of Moscow is conducted. There is an immense bazaar, consisting of extensive piazzas in the style of the Burlington Arcade, but infinitely inferior to it in elegance. This market, as it is termed by the English residents, is situated on both sides of the great street leading from the Holy Gate, and here the carriages of the nobility, who come to purchase the commodities of the place, are ranged in lines, and occasionally so confusedly jammed together, that the Cossacks in attendance, are hardly able to restore order, even with the free application of their whips.

Digitized by Google

As these shops are narrow and roofed over with glass, they are very cold even in summer, and from this cause it is said the shopkeepers are extremely unhealthy. It is annoying to a stranger to enter this bazaar, for no old clothesman of Monmouth-street, or Rag-fair, was ever more troublesome or importunate in his solicitations for custom than the tradesman of this place. He perseveres in trying you at all points, in hopes of discovering that you want something. On every side you are overwhelmed with encomiums on the excellence of the various wares. In the boot and shoe shops, the customer is induced to purchase on the assurance—made doubly sure by an invocation of God and all his saints to witness its truth;—that the Caloshee, Sapoghee, and Bashmakee, are all Nemetski-rabote; that is of right German make, although it is ten to one that not a pair of that quality is contained in the whole shop.

Few occurrences are more painful to an Englishman in Russia, than to enter a shop to purchase even the smallest article, he is sure

Digitized by Google

to be cheated unless he is indeed a *knowing-one;*—for instance, if he enquires for a piece of cloth, the shopkeeper will shew, in the first place, the worst he has, and exert all his rhetoric to persuade him that it is the best ever made; on rejecting it, he rings a variety of changes on other pieces of increasing quality; until at length he is forced, as it were, to produce what is really the best. Now comes the second contest, the battle of prices. "Pray, sir, what is the price of that piece per yard?" "Thirty roubles at a word," replies the shopkeeper. The customer shrugs up his shoulders, and muttering "dorrago othchen dorrago," (dear, very dear) prepares to leave the shop, which the other observing, offers to let him have it, as a great favour, at twenty-five roubles. The gentleman, however, still shakes his head;—"Well, then what will you give sir?" "Eighteen roubles." "How can you offer me such a sum?" rejoins the shopkeeper. "I vow to God, I myself paid more for it." "I am very sorry I cannot offer you more." "Well, then twenty-three roubles at the last

Digitized by Google

word." No, sir,"—" then twenty." " No, sir." " Good bye:" but just on leaving the door the honest tradesman shouts out—" please sir to take them." The purchaser returns and receives the cloth, when it behoves him to be careful that it has not been changed, while he has turned his back; after this he walks off with compliments and thanks showered down upon him in profusion.

The nobility chiefly inhabit what is termed the Beloi-gorod or White City, so called from the whiteness of the houses, which, although built of brick, are stuccoed. It is situated without the Kitai-gorod, within the circuit of the first ditch, which has lately been converted into public walks or boulevards. In these two last divisions of the town, the houses must all be built of brick, and roofed with cast iron; in the more outward towns, the inhabitants are permitted to build with wood, and roof with the same material if they please; formerly the roofs of the houses were painted black, but the emperor about five years since, noticing the sombre appearance this made, gave orders that in future

Digitized by Google

they should be painted of a green, red, or grey colour.

Beyond the boulevards lately mentioned, is the Tartar Town surrounded by a ditch, and without the latter, an immense space occupied by houses and gardens.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

Classes, Manners, and Customs of the Russians. — Traits of national character — The people divisible into two classes—The nobility—Their dress—The ladies—Numerous servants—Their employments and costume—Mode of living amongst the nobles—Breakfast—Dinner—Card-playing, &c.—Supper—Customs—The Peasantry—The merchants, tradesmen, and mechanics — Observations on slavery—The serfs of Russia—Purchase of slaves—Dress of the lower peasantry—Mode of living—Female occupation.

HAVING now visited the two chief cities of this empire, St. Petersburg and Moscow, and been for many months conversant with the manners and customs of the Russian people, I shall, previously to setting out for Siberia, venture upon a few observations respecting these points.

It is not, however, to be expected that a limited intercourse with the metropolis of an

Digitized by Google

empire, constituted like that of Russia, can enable the traveller to enter minutely or correctly, into the various traits and shades of its national character; since the latter must necessarily, in such a situation, be materially influenced by a variety of artificial and accidental causes, dependant upon the reigning modes of fashion and politics, which finding here a luxuriant soil, give a monstrosity, or rankness of growth, that disguises, or even occasionally obliterates, its genuine and natural features.

The Russians, generally, are possessed of much natural quickness of mind and sensibility of feeling, which gives them the appearance of being a cheerful, amiable, and open hearted people; but alas! under this exterior are concealed so much disingenuosness and artful policy, as to diminish materially, on closer acquaintance, that estimation to which they would otherwise be justly entitled. How lamentable it is, that the noble mind of man should be led by the meanness of artifice, to violate the principles of honour and honesty.

Digitized by Google

Although some of the highest classes are not altogether exempt from a tincture of this discreditable principle, yet it is among the lower orders that it operates most actively, so as to degenerate into the lowest cunning, meanness, and perfidiousness, and cast a shade of obloquy over the various transactions between man and man; in short, they hesitate at no breach of moral duty, so that they can accomplish their darling object of acquiring money.

> "And conscience, truth, and honesty are made,
> To rise and fall like other wares of trade!"

The only excuse that can be offered for this want of proper feeling is, that education is in this country so generally defective, that few of the sound principles of religion or morality are instilled to inculcate better conduct. Indeed these people are so little aware of the nature of human justice, that a former writer, adverting to this blemish on their character, observes, that "in whatever they do or perpetrate, they think they are acting right; and as they seldom look back on the past, or anti-

Digitized by Google

cipate the future, they derive little advantage in the culture of their moral principles from experience."

In further extenuation it may be urged, that the system of slavery authorised by the government, necessarily tends to depress the nobler feelings, and degrade the character of the population of this country.

The following are illustrations of the ingenuity and cunning of the lower classes of the Russian people, the occurrences to which they relate having been communicated to me by persons on whose veracity I can rely.

A tub of butter was one day offered for sale to a gentleman, apparently so excellent in its quality, that he was induced to purchase the whole of it, weighing fifty-two pounds. On using it, however, with hot toast on the following morning, it was found so combined with water, that the bread was literally soaked with that fluid, which had been, in the making, ingeniously *frozen* into it in such quantities, that when separated, little more than half the proper quantity of butter remained.

A lady of my acquaintance, purchased from

Digitized by Google

a man in the streets, a number of pots of fine carnations, at the same time agreeing with him to bring more on the following day; and to insure his punctuality, she only paid him half the price of her first purchase. On proceeding to transplant them into a flower bed, they were all found to be without roots! The man had, notwithstanding, the assurance to make his appearance the next morning, when, on being threatened with committal into the hands of the police, he solemnly protested his innocence, but, what was inconsistent enough, prostrated himself on the ground, and abjectly solicited forgiveness. After keeping him sometime in suspence he was suffered to depart.

A gentleman who had received an invitation to a ball, at a merchant's house, on ascending the staircase, met a man passing down with a number of fur pelisses over his shoulder, and who offered to place his with the rest; an opportunity of disposing of it which he was glad to avail himself of. When the party broke up, he, as well as other gentlemen, sought for their

Digitized by Google

great coats in vain, the supposed servant proving to be a thief, who had thus ingeniously contrived to carry them off. There is a proverb in Russia, that "there cannot be thieves from without, if there are not some within."

An amusing robbery of the master of the police himself, took place some time since at Moscow. A nobleman waited upon this officer to say that the Countess K—— was anxious to see him on the instant, and pressed, him in order to gain time, to avail himself of the equipage he had himself come in. On his arrival, the servant who had accompanied him took off his pelisse, when he was ushered into the drawing-room. After some conversation, it came out that the lady had not sent for him. Nothing remained but to return home; when, to complete his astonishment, it was discovered, on passing into the anti-room, that the servant, pelisse, and equipage had all disappeared. It proved that the nobleman had laid a bet, that he would have this important gentleman's pelisse stolen from off his back, and had made

Digitized by Google

use of this stratagem to win his wager. Of course his pelisse was afterwards returned to him.

Perhaps, for ingenuity, the following trick would not be surpassed in London or Paris. A respectable looking man fell senseless in the street from a fit, when a person in the crowd started forward exclaiming, "Oh, my master! my poor master!" He now very coolly transferred the contents of the unfortunate gentleman's pockets into his own, not forgetting his watch, and then, with all the concern imaginable, requested the persons near him to watch his poor master, while he ran to procure an equipage to convey him home. On being observed to pass a coach-stand without stopping, the cheat was detected; but it was too late, for he contrived to get clear off with his booty.

To compensate these darker shades of character, the Russians are possessed of many estimable qualities. Their hospitality is unbounded, and, perhaps, from the palace to the cottage, equals that of any other people in the world. The stranger, particularly if destitute or in distress, requires no other passport to

Digitized by Google

their benevolence, and may travel from one extremity of this vast empire to the other, and receive the most disinterested succour and comfort, without being deemed either intrusive or burdensome.

In private life this virtue shines most conspicuous; so that a person who has once secured an introduction into a family, is, without the ceremony of an express invitation, afterwards regarded as a welcome visitor, whenever he feels disposed to avail himself of the privilege; nay, a remissness in this respect often receives a friendly reproach.

Another virtue amongst this people is a disinterested principle of charity, scarcely equalled in any other country. I shall have various occasions for illustrating this point; the following example, however, will suffice for the present. A friend of mine observing a tradesman, at whose shop he was making a purchase, give money to an intoxicated woman, inquired his motive for relieving a person in her improper state. "She begged," he replied, "in the name of Jesus Christ, and I could not refuse her; if she does not make

Digitized by Google

right use of what I gave, the fault rests with herself, not me." It is by no means unusual for the merchants and shopkeepers to send bread and other necessaries to the prisons and hospitals, besides relieving privately many other objects of charity. It is remarked that beggars are much more numerous in Moscow than at St. Petersburg; and you frequently there see parties of peasantry going about, under the sanction of the police, to collect money for re-building their villages that have been destroyed by fire.

The population of Russia may be divided into two classes—the nobility, and the peasantry; the former comprising such only as have attained military rank, together with their descendants; the latter, the great mass of the people.

The nobility have again been divided into two orders—the higher, and lower nobility; the distinction between which is arbitrary and undefined:—the only actual difference appears to consist in the greater or lesser opulence of the individual; so that here, as under all other more ordinary circumstances, he who

Digitized by Google

has the greater command of worldly advantages, is deemed the greatest.

The dress of the Russian nobility, while resident in the capital, is both elegant and expensive; in the country, however, less attention is paid to this point. The gentlemen follow the fashions of London, the ladies those of Paris; and many of their tailors and *marchandes des modes*, according to the vocabulary of our English artists, give undoubted evidence of high *scientific* taste.

Nothing can be more fascinating than a Russian ball or dress party, where the ladies exhibit all the taste of our Gallic neighbours, and which, it must be confessed, on such occasions, surpasses that of our fair countrywomen. The latter, however, transcendantly outrival all other women in the world in their morning costume: in short, it is in the neatness and simplicity of her dress at the breakfast-table, that the English lady evinces a degree of propriety and elegance, to which no parallel can be found. The ladies of Russia, indeed, pay so little attention to their personal appearance, that, throughout the morning, the hair

Digitized by Google

is generally seen in paper, and the body inelegantly enveloped in a loose robe, *sans corset.*

The Russian ladies are not generally considered handsome; nor is this the mere invidious observation of a stranger, for the Russian gentlemen themselves are disposed to admit the superior charms of other females; and I have frequently heard them speak, with rapturous delight, of the beauty of their Polish neighbours. To assert, however, that there are no handsome women in Russia, is a libel not to be credited; at all events, the exceptions are most numerous; and if they are not all beautiful, they are generally amiable, frequently fascinating, and possessed of many of the virtues that adorn the female sex.

There is one habit attached to the ladies of this country which, in my opinion, detracts materially from the interest they would otherwise excite in the eye of an Englishman—the disgusting custom of taking snuff, and for which I can imagine no reasonable excuse. They are also more intensely devoted to card-playing than is rational, or consistent with mere amusement. I knew a married lady,

Digitized by Google

with a young family, who had such a passion for these occupations, that the cards or snuff-box were scarcely ever out of her hands. I also heard of an instance, where a priest came to confess a lady while engaged at cards, when he was requested to wait until she had finished her game.

The richer nobility keep an extraordinary number of servants, who, as sufficient occupation cannot be found for them, become indolent in the extreme. Count Vladimer Orloff, it is said, retains not less than eight hundred domestics in his family. And yet, one day, when I had the honour of dining with him, he related to me that he had rang his bell several times before it was answered,* although he had nine servants exclusively attached to his person, and whose business it was to wait in the anti-room. Each was ready with his excuse: one had been to the housekeeper, another cleaning a pair of shoes, a third brushing a coat, &c. It was evident, however,

* Bells are not very numerous in the Russian houses, and I have frequently heard the master of a Russian family summon his servants by a whistle or a holloa.

Digitized by Google

that they had, most of them, been asleep. The count terminated the affair by assuring them, that if the neglect was repeated, he would make them beat each other into a proper sense of their duty.

It is usual, at the door of every nobleman's house, to have a servant called the *suisse*, dressed in the family livery, with a broad embroidered sash around his waist, or a belt hanging across the body from one shoulder, and a gilt-headed staff in his hand. This man receives cards, and takes charge of the hats, great-coats, &c.

The upper servants imitate, as far as they can, the dresses of their masters and mistresses; the men have their hair cut short, and are clean shaven, and the women plait their hair into a long string, which is then coiled up like a snake, and secured at the back of the head with a comb; the fore part is divided in the centre, each division lying behind the ear, and terminating in a curl.

The other servants are dressed in the family liveries of their respective masters. The coachman, however, cuts the smartest figure

Digitized by Google

of the group. In summer, he wears a hat with a low crown, the upper part of which projects to about half the external circumference of the brim; the body is surrounded with a robe, that reaches to the ancles, and is secured around the waist by a silk sash of various colours, made expressly for the purpose, and about ten inches broad; the beard is worn long, and without a cravat. In winter the costume differs, and consists of a wadded fur cap, with a broad flat top, and ornamented with a gold tassel. Under the ordinary summer robe is worn a sheep-skin shoub, to protect from cold; and on the feet are double worsted stockings, with white shoes; the latter are made of wool and a glutinous substance, beat up together, which composition is then moulded over a form, and dries very hard; it is then extremely effectual in keeping out cold.

Some of the nobility, in order to employ their servants, have them instructed in music and theatrical pursuits; so that they have both their family band and company of comedians attached to their establishment. Indeed,

Digitized by Google

in their domestic orchestras the number of performers is occasionally so superabundant, that each musician plays only a single note, as is particularly instanced in their peculiarly national horn music. This system becomes the more necessary, as it is the custom never to employ the in-door servants in agriculture, or other out-door occupation.

The following is a detail of the general manner of living amongst the Russian nobility.

The first breakfast is taken at seven or eight, in the private apartment of each individual; this, however, only consists of a crust of bread or a biscuit, with a cup of coffee, accompanied occasionally, on the part of the gentleman, by a pipe or segar. Between eleven and one they ordinarily take a *dejeuné a la fourchette.*

The usual time of dining is from two to four; but the party generally assemble some time previously, and occasionally sit down to cards until it is announced. The dinner is almost always preceded by caviare, dried fish, butter and cheese, or some other

Digitized by Google

similar relish, to whet the appetite; as also wine, brandy, or liquors.

In some families the ladies sit together at one end of the table, while in others they mix indiscriminately with the gentlemen.

The dinner is generally cooked and served according to the French or German fashion, or a mixture of both; the former, however, is considered the most stylish. To an English eye, the table presents a singular *coup d'œil*, being rather covered with fruits, cakes, sweetmeats, &c., than the more substantial viands, the latter being carried round in succession to the company; and to prevent delay, the same kind of meat is generally served at different parts of the table at once. The ordinary French wines, Madeira, and decanters of water, are placed on the table; you are, however, occasionally presented with a variety of other wines of the first quality, and the repast always concludes with a glass of Malaga, when the dessert is served up. This last part of the entertainment is brought forward as a continuation of the dinner;

Digitized by Google

and after it is concluded, the company immediately retire to the drawing-room, where coffee is instantly presented to them. The company soon after disperse, although some few, occasionally, remain to play at cards or billiards.

In the evening, about seven or eight o'clock, the party re-assemble, when cards, chess, and conversation, contribute to amuse them until supper is ready; cards, however, constitute the more favourite amusement with the Russian nobility, who occasionally play very high. The most fashionable games are whist, Boston, acarté, and patience; they are also fond of fortune-telling.

It is customary here, as in some parts of England, to pay for your cards at the rate of five roubles for two packs, which leaves a profit of about cent. per cent. for the servant that furnishes them. In marking the game, a piece of chalk, formed like a crayon, is used, with which the number is written on the cloth; to remove this, when an alteration is required, a small brush, made for the purpose, lies upon the table.

Digitized by Google

So great is the passion of the Russians for card-playing, that many of them spend a large portion of their time in the occupation; even in the forenoon they may frequently be seen playing at patience, or telling fortunes; and I am assured, that with respect to the latter, when a marriage is on foot, they not only try the cards themselves, but request their friends to do the same; and even occasionally consult a professed fortune-teller to declare their future destiny.

About eleven o'clock supper is announced, preceded, however, like the dinner by caviare, &c.; after which, on rising from the table, the party immediately retire.

The Russians hurry over their meals so fast, that there is seldom much time for conversation. I have frequently had my plate taken away while I rested my fork, in the act of addressing some one or other of the party; but there are so many servants in attendance, that it has no sooner been carried away on one side, than another has been substituted in its room on the other, so that ignorant of the change, when about to recommence eat-

Digitized by Google

ing, I have been much surprised to find *nothing* on my plate.

On rising from the table the Russians always cross themselves over the breast, making the sign very small and quick; the ladies are said to be particularly graceful in performing this ceremony, always turning themselves to the image in the room.

The Russians rarely visit by a formal invitation as we do in England. I once dined with a family where no one but myself was expected; and the table was only laid for ten visitors; just before we sat down two or three others came in, and announced the intention of more coming to partake of their friend's dinner, and in this way the party accumulated until there were not less than four and twenty. The table was necessarily enlarged, but no other apparent alteration made, and yet the dinner was as plentiful as if the whole had been expected; it is one advantage of the French mode of cookery, that many of their dishes admit of being made up extemporaneously, as it were, during dinner time.

Digitized by Google

As a substitute for formal invitations, the Russians are very particular in calling, dining, or supping, with their friends on their respective names-days. For this purpose they have only to look into the calendar, as soon as they rise in a morning, and as most of these people bear the name of some saint or other, the arrangement for the day is readily made out; those, however, who have a very extensive circle of acquaintance, keep a memorandum book, for the purpose of recording the names-days of their friends. The birth-day is made of no account, and may be entirely overlooked without giving offence.

The peasantry of Russia, may also be divided under two heads. The merchants and tradesmen; and the slaves or serfs.

The merchants and tradesmen have all originally been slaves, who, having accumulated money sufficient to commence mercantile pursuits, and perhaps to purchase their freedom, then constitute what may be considered, as virtually, a distinct order of the community. They differ from each other, chiefly according to their respective degrees

Digitized by Google

of opulence; so that while the lower tradesmen are little above the level of slaves, the first and richest merchants, in a degree, approximate to the nobility, or rather imitate them; for the two classes are ever kept at a distance that forbids them entering into any thing like contiguity, or competition, as is the case with the more elevated merchants of England.

The merchants, with the exception of some few of the more refined ones, universally wear beards and fur caps. Their dress, in summer, is a long coat or caftan, with a girdle, and long boots; when they go out in cold weather, they wear a fur shube, with warm outer boots.

I have already, when treating of St. Petersburg, as well as in different parts of the work, described the habits and mode of living of this part of the Russian people.

The system of slavery, in which the lower orders of the Russian people are kept by their government, and which is certainly widely opposed to the happy liberty of the correspondent ranks of our countrymen, can scarcely fail to impress a British bosom as

Digitized by Google

unjust, oppressive, and derogatory to the dignity of man; but yet it is a question, whether as matters at present stand in this country, the system is not the one best adapted to promote the happiness and interests of the individuals concerned; who, if presented with the divine boon, would neither know how to appreciate its value, or controul the dangerous licences it might lead to; population must have materially increased, the various orders of society be more amalgamated, and the principles of sound morality and education more generally diffused, before the word of emancipation can be sent forth with advantage; these must be the works of a future age, and can only be brought about by a series of progressive changes. Nor is the condition of the lower peasantry so degraded or pitiable as has been generally imagined. With all its exertion of arbitrary power, the government is sufficiently paternal to adopt generally, the most excellent measures to promote their best interests. It is true, the serfs are much exposed to the caprices of their more immediate lords, who occasionally exer-

Digitized by Google

cise the privileges they possess with a rigidity, amounting to despotism; but they have advantages, which, with industry, will generally enable them to break through the fetters of indigence, attain wealth, and enjoy the pleasures and luxuries of life, as far as the constitution of their minds admit of it. One circumstance, however, has often excited a most painful feeling in my breast, a feeling amounting to indignation; the manner in which persons, who possess rank, make use of the whip, to stimulate the peasants to exertion; a fact that I have frequently been sensible of, at the various post-stations, which I have made on my journey. It is true, that this is part of a system, which custom has rendered familiar, if not necessary; and in consequence, it appears not to gall the mind, however much the body may suffer from it; and at all events, it excites none of that warmth of injured feeling, or spirit of retaliation, that would instantly burst forth in the bosom of an Englishman, subjected to similar treatment.

Each slave pays a poll, or capitation tax to

Digitized by Google

the government, and which is always levied from the lord, whether the number has increased or diminished, according to the last census. Peter the Great was the first monarch of this country who caused a census of his subjects to be taken; it included, however, only the male population; since his time there have been six more taken; the last in 1815, when Alexander caused the females also to be numbered. In the event of a slave being sold to a new master, the former proprietor continues to be charged with the capitation tax until a new census is taken; the payment of which is of course considered in the deed of contract.

The following is a literal translation of a letter from a peasant to a Russian gentleman, requesting him to purchase himself and family.

"To your high nobility, Augustus, the son of Charles, and to your wife, and to your children, we wish you health, and we bow to you all, and we for ever thank you for your goodness. We beg of you, Augustus, the son of Charles, of the government of Witepsky, the

Digitized by Google

town of Lutin, the estate of Raidini. Mr. S—— who asked your goodness in the autumn, about the freedom of Jacob Sesentief, the bald-headed; his family is four souls, the son is eleven years old, the daughter is twelve years old, and the gentleman asks for the two married souls six hundred roubles, and besides to pay the capitation tax; but when your goodness will please to think of us, then we are your servants for ever; when your goodness will send us the price, then we shall live. Augustus, son of Charles, do us this favour; we reckon on you as on God; so if your goodness should, then write to us back in a quick hour. With this letter I remain alive, in health; and for the future rely on God.

"*1823rd year, the month of May, the 9th date.*"

The dress of the lower peasantry corresponds with that of the merchant, except that it is made of coarser materials; instead of boots, however, the legs and feet are surrounded with coarse cloth, secured by a cord made from the bark of the lime-tree; they wear also sandals, made with the same mate-

Digitized by Google

rials; the hands are protected by double mittens, the inner ones being of worsted, and the outer ones of leather. The women, besides the under garments generally used by the sex, wear a sheep-skin shoub, similar to that of the men.

The ancient Asiatic costume is rapidly giving way in all the larger cities, and is chiefly confined to the merchants, shop-keepers, labourers, and peasants. Servants, barbers, tailors, and many others, now shave, and adopt the common European dress.

The general mode of living amongst the peasantry is much the same as has already been detailed at St. Petersburg.

The females very seldom employ themselves with needle-work, or domestic occupations within doors, except of the coarser kind, as cooking, cleaning their apartments, &c. &c. When not thus engaged, some few employ themselves in knitting and spinning, but *sleeping* is more congenial with their feelings.

In some of the villages the young women assemble in the evening at each others houses, and amuse themselves with spinning and sing-

Digitized by Google

ing. On these occasions they seat themselves in a circle, with a torch of pine wood burning in the centre, and which it is the office of one of them to superintend, so as to keep it constantly lighted.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

Departure from Moscow—The Author's reflections—He is lost in a wood—Difficulty in procuring post horses—Coparna—Vladimer—Murom—Nijni-Novogorod—Fair of Nijni-Novogorod—The Author on the picturesque—Liskova—Prince of Georgia—Macarief—Visit to the convent—The Princess of Georgia—Vasili-soursk—Accidents and delays—Tchebocsar—Embark on the Volga—Violent altercation between the crew—Bakalda—Arrival at Cazan.

At nine o'clock in the morning of June 12th, I went to the diligence-office, where I found Captain Cochrane already seated in the carriage, and in the act of driving off for St. Petersburg. I was just in time to shake him by the hand, and wish himself and companions a *bon voyage;* I then returned to my lodgings, to prepare for my own departure, and at ten o'clock, after taking an affectionate leave of the few friends who came to see me

Digitized by Google

off, commenced my long anticipated journey into Siberia.

My situation was now one of extreme novelty, and my feelings corresponded with its peculiarity. I was engaged under circumstances of unusual occurrence, in a solitary journey of several thousand miles, through a country, perhaps, the wildest on the face of the earth, and whose inhabitants were scarcely yet accounted within the pale of civilization; with no other attendant than a rude Tartar postillion, to whose language my ear was wholly unaccustomed. And yet I was supported by a feeling of happy confidence, with a calm resignation to all the inconveniences and risks of my arduous undertaking; nay, I even derived a real inward gratification, in the prospect of retirement from the eternal round of pleasure and social enjoyments of which I had been participating to a degree of satiety that began to be oppressive; again and again I interested myself by contrasting my voluntary exile with the constrained banishment of the numerous unfortunate wretches who have been doomed to languish away, in the inhos-

Digitized by Google

pitable wilds I was about to traverse, the remnant of a protracted existence, aggravated by an eternal separation from all the blessings that they have deemed most dear to them in life.

I was soon, however, roused from my reveries by finding that our postillion had lost his way. It had been arranged that I should call at the country-seat of a gentleman not far distant from the city, and my friends had directed the postillion accordingly. It was in vain that he attempted to elicit any information from myself, for his words were quite unintelligible; and how long our embarrassment would have lasted I know not, had not a young gentleman rode up, who was able to converse in English, and who, it was singular enough, proved to be a nephew of the lady of the family I was proposing to visit. This gentleman offered to conduct us, and of course, I congratulated myself on being now in the right way; but no! we were still doomed to disappointment; our new guide actually found himself lost, and after leading us from one road to another, at length fairly admitted, that

Digitized by Google

he knew not where to go: we were at this time in the midst of a wood, with roads branching in all directions. At length, after rambling about for some time, we stumbled upon a peasant, who directed us to the main road and the house we were in quest of, and which I had passed close by at least two hours before. We were here heartily welcomed by our friends, who amused themselves not a little with our adventures in the wood; chiefly, however, at the expence of their young relative.

After dinner I recommenced my journey, and at length arrived at the end of the first station, where I had the mortification to be informed that there were no post-horses to be procured, although I was given to understand I might engage horses from the peasants of the place. As I should have had to pay a considerable extra demand for this accommodation, I felt forcibly impressed by the belief that the post-master and peasants were in collusion, to make their advantage of me; I, therefore, for a time, determined to appear indifferent, and resist the imposition, and declared my intention of waiting until

Digitized by Google

horses might arrive. I therefore, as it began to rain hard, covered myself up in my pavoshka,* with every appearance of resignation; but reflecting that time was more precious than money, I at length determined to avail myself of the peasants' horses, and proceed to a manufactory, which belonged to the gentleman whose house I had so lately dined at, to pay him a visit, also with the hope that he would be able to assist me in making an arrangement for my farther progress; but on my arrival, I had the misfortune to find that he had just left, and must have passed me on the road. I had no remedy but to make the best of my way to Coparna, a village, adjoining to which I knew there resided a countryman, Mr. T——, who was superintending a woollen manufactory, the property of Prince Usupoff. On my arrival, this gentleman was greatly astonished to see me, and could hardly be brought to credit the account I gave of myself;

* A pavoshka is a small kind of four-wheeled cart, or telega, without springs, and with a head to protect from the weather; it is generally drawn by three horses, one of which runs within the shafts, while the other two are attached, by outriggers, on each side.

Digitized by Google

Printed by N. Chater & Co. 33 Fleet St.

Vol: 1. Page 330.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

however, he immediately invited me to spend the night at his house, and was kind enough to promise to see me provided with horses in the morning. I had the pleasure of passing an agreeable evening, and the gratification of enjoying, for one night more, a comfortable bed, which I had no right to expect after quitting Moscow.

In the morning, after breakfast, I set off, with peasants' horses, for Boghorodsk, a small town, distant about fifty versts from Moscow. Here I again received the unpleasant intelligence that no post-horses were to be had, and had no alternative but to wait an indefinite time, or to take peasants' horses again, of which a plentiful supply was offered to convey me forward to Vladimer. For this, however, they demanded what I knew to be an exorbitant sum, and therefore I determined to appear indifferent, manifesting my intention to wait for post-horses, and taking out my provisions, with which I began to occupy myself. Viewing this, the peasants lowered their prices; and at length finding, by repeatedly sounding the post-master, that I had little

Digitized by Google

encouragement on his part, I agreed with them to carry me on to Vladimer, a distance of ninety-seven miles, for thirty-one roubles, equal to twenty-six shillings. This, however, was more than double what the ordinary posting would have cost me.

We now travelled all night, and this without making any rapid progress, for the stations were long, and the roads bad, particularly one that was made with trees laid transversely across the path, and which, every instant, gave us such intolerable jerks, my equipage being without springs, that I was fain to get out and walk: in short, no position within the carriage was tenable, and the shocks it gave my brain so excessive, that it felt every instant ready to burst out of its tenement. This dreadful road continued for several versts.

We arrived at Vladimer at three o'clock in the afternoon, when, having a letter for the governor, I drove first to his house, in the hope of learning where I could obtain comfortable quarters. He was, however, unfortunately, from home. Disappointed here,

Digitized by Google

my postillion and driver conducted me to what they were pleased to designate as good lodgings, where, however, on examining my apartment, I found nothing to entitle it to such an appellation. It contained but an old table, two wooden chairs, and a wooden frame to sleep upon. I was anxious to ascertain whether the ancient city of Vladimer did not afford some more comfortable accommodation for strangers, and at length had a man brought to me, who was supposed to know something of French; the only information, however, I could derive was, that the lodgings which had been offered me were excellently good ones, and that I could not have any better; nor was this comforting intelligence imparted, until I had answered a variety of impertinent enquiries concerning my rank, and more particularly whether I was a baron or a captain. In the evening I repeated my visit to the governor, whom I had now the pleasure of finding at home. He received me very politely, and kindly sent a servant to my quarters, to see the most comfortable arrangement possible made for me; so that on my

Digitized by Google

return, I found every disposition to treat me with attention, as well as a straw mattress and pillow for my night's repose; and on which I contrived, after my jolting bout for the preceding day and night, to sleep as soundly as if I had lain upon the finest bed of down.

I spent the next morning in visiting this venerable city, once the capital of all the Russias. It contains, at this time, a population of only eight thousand souls. I had afterwards the honour of dining with the governor, in the company of an agreeable party. The following anecdote respecting a medical man was here related by himself. He stated, that when attached to the army, he had the misfortune to fall into the hands of the Turks, who, sharpening their knives, removed his handkerchief, preparatory to taking off his head. At this juncture, he recollected a Turkish prisoner having recommended him, under such circumstances, should they ever befal him, to repeat two Turkish words, which signify, "I am a medical man." He had the happiness immediately to find their efficacy; for the enemy not only desisted from their

Digitized by Google

butcher-like purpose, but restored him to his property and liberty.

After dinner I accompanied a gentleman, in his carriage, to the cathedral, where there is a fine painting of St. Vladimer, by Tonthi, an Italian artist. We then proceeded to examine some other interesting buildings, and afterwards went to the public walks. I then took tea with this gentleman; and on returning to my lodgings, having procured post-horses, recommenced my journey at eight in the evening, being provided with a letter from the post-master, which I found useful in procuring me horses without delay at the different post-stations.

Our progress was, however, much impeded by the bad state of the roads; and, on the following morning, I was detained at one point for two hours, by the necessary repairs of my equipage. In the early part of the day we traversed heavy sandy roads, leading through forests. At the station where I took my dinner, I met a stupid kind of medical man, who was on his way to Irkoutz, where he had received a government appointment

Digitized by Google

as *accoucheur*. Had he possessed more intelligence, I might have been happy in him as a companion; but, there was another objection to our proceeding together, that he was hastening to his point with all possible celerity.

In the evening I reached the town of Murom, distant about two hundred miles from Moscow, and one hundred from Nijni Novogorod. About midnight, we crossed the river Oka, on a *perrevost*, or stage-raft; a machine frequently used in Russia, as a substitute for bridges. After leaving Murom, I found the postmasters and drivers much more civil and attentive, which may be attributed to the diminished demand for horses, the country becoming now less populous.

At the station before reaching Nijni Novogorod, we met the governor of Cazan, on his way to Moscow, for whom I had a letter of introduction; which, with much trouble, I ferretted from out of my packages, and presented to him. He was so kind, as to express his regret that his absence would prevent those attentions, he should otherwise have been happy to have shewn me at Cazan; but

Digitized by Google

to compensate it, he would write to the vice-governor, on the subject. After partaking of refreshment with him, we proceeded on our respective journeys; and between three and four in the morning, I arrived at the city of Nijni Novogorod.

As I proposed spending a day or two at this place, my postillion drove me to a lodging-house, where they gave me a room, containing a mere wooden frame, on which I could lay the travelling mattress with which I had fortunately provided myself, at the suggestion of Dr. Lyall, whose experience had led him to duly appreciate the necessity and advantage of such an article. After this, I called at the governor's, for whom I had a letter, but was disappointed in finding both himself and his lady from home; nor was their return expected during my stay in this city. I had, however, another letter for Captain G——, whose residence I at length had the satisfaction of making out, notwithstanding my attempts were nearly baffled by the obstinacy and sulkiness of my Tartar, who was always averse to incur trouble when he

Digitized by Google

could possibly avoid it. The captain, being from home, and not expected to return until the evening, I went back to my lodgings, where I found the Siberian *accoucheur*, with whom I made an arrangement to dine. In the evening I repeated my visit to Captain G——, whom I had the pleasure of finding a gentlemanly intelligent man, well conversant with both the French and English languages, advantages which it may be believed, I knew how to appreciate.

Nijni Novogorod has experienced a rapid improvement of late, in consequence of the great annual fair of Macarief, having been transferred to it. The principal streets, which were previously covered with wood, have since been paved; and the foundation of new assembly rooms, upon the principle of the English clubs at St. Petersburg and Moscow, has just been laid by the Prince of Georgia; many other buildings are also in progress. The town itself, is situated on an elevated spot, at the confluence of the Oka with the Volga, and commands many delightful views of the surrounding country.

Digitized by Google

On the 19th I crossed the Oka, to visit the buildings belonging to the fair, which is held on the opposite bank of the river. These buildings have been erected on a low tract of ground, in many places, originally, more than twenty feet below the present level; the surface having been artificially raised by soil transported, partly from a hill at some distance, and partly from an island of the river. This island lies immediately in the line of communication between the fair and the town, and which communication is established by temporary bridges of pontoons, that are removed to a place of security, after the business of the season has terminated.

The fair consists of various buildings, or ranges of shops, &c., laid out in regular streets, the whole comprising an oblong square; the three sides which are unprotected by the Oka, are surrounded by a canal, that is supplied by a lake in its vicinity, the waters of which are brought a distance of fourteen versts from the river Pira; this canal, which is from ninety to a hundred and forty yards in breadth, can be evacuated at pleasure, by means

Digitized by Google

of a subterranean culvert that opens into the Oka. It is in contemplation to make another canal, communicating with the Volga, and which will admit of merchandize being brought up to the very doors of the warehouses.

The front of the fair towards the Oka extends about three hundred and fifty yards, and the whole is divided into two equal parts, by a main street running longitudinally through its middle to double that extent. In the centre of a square, formed at the nearer end, is situated the governor's house, the sides of the square being occupied by public offices. At the farther extremity of this principal street is a church, flanked on the right and left by buildings in the Chinese style of architecture. Parallel with the main street are ten lesser ones, and the whole are intersected at right angles, by various transverse streets. There are also numerous buildings for cooking, and other accommodation of the visitors; but which, in order to obviate the risk of fire, are placed at a considerable distance from the proper fair, on the outer side of the canal.

Digitized by Google

The expence of this immense undertaking, including the canal, was not less than eight millions of roubles. It returned, however, in the year 1822, a rent of six hundred and seventy thousand roubles; and it is supposed, that three hundred thousand persons of different nations attended the fair. The above income arises from the rent of the various shops, &c., for which a fixed price is taken; each article of merchandize having its respective situation. The rent is much higher than formerly, when the fair was held at Macarief, and many of the people express their dissatisfaction, not only on this account, but at the change altogether; and they particularly urge the danger of being overflowed by spring floods; an accident, however, which the engineers employed, have apparently taken every necessary precaution to guard against. When the admirable arrangements, not only of buildings, but of every other measure, which has been adopted both for safety and convenience, are taken into consideration, no disinterested person can question

Digitized by Google

the preferable situation of the present, as compared with the former establishment.

The original fair at Macarief, was the property of the Prince of Georgia, who received a rent for the various shops, proportionate to the value of the commodities sold in them; and whose income must have suffered materially by the government having taken the fair into its own hands.

The business of the fair when held at Macarief, during the year 1817, was more extensive than usual; the quantity of merchandize brought forward, however, materially exceeded the sales, in consequence of the high prices demanded. This was more particularly the case with respect to Asiatic produce, which arrived in great abundance, under the charge of no less than three thousand merchants. The following is a statement of the principal articles then exposed to sale, with their respective prices:

	Roubles.	Roubles.	
Cotton goods -	50	to 150	the piece.
Cloth, ditto - - -	7	to 40	the arshine.

Digitized by Google

	Roubles.		Roubles.	
Sugar - - - - -	60	to	80	the pood of 36 lbs.
Indigo, fine - - -	550	to	700	the pood.
Tea, in chests - -	100	to	200	the 50 lbs.
Madeira wines - -	0		30	the vedro, or 11 bottles
Ordinary white, do.	0		20	the vedro.
Rum - - - - - -	60	to	70	do.
Brandy - - - - -	0		50	the anker.
Coffee - - - - -	50	to	70	the pood.
Common Tobacco -				
Virginia ditto - -	50	to	70	the 100 lbs.
Snuff - - - - -	40	to	50	
Writing Paper - -	4	to	8	the ream.
Common Soap - -			8	the pood.
Russian Leather -			35	the hide.

The wines were in great abundance, the trade being principally conducted by the Armenian merchants, who also deal largely in fish.

The Asiatics, and particularly the Armenians, made great purchases of paper; chiefly with the view of reselling it to the Persians.

Digitized by Google

The importation of soap was so extensive, that large quantities were returned unsold to Cazan.

There were six booksellers' shops, but no foreign books were to be found amongst their stores. The Tartars brought in a great number of horses, which sold readily at from a hundred to five hundred roubles each. The trade of the Persians was chiefly in silks.

The fair commenced on the 1st July, (O. S.) and, during the six weeks it continued, was enlivened by theatrical performances by the company belonging to the Prince of Georgia.

The principal merchants estimate the extent of business done as follows.

The number of shops were two thousand; of which

	Roubles.	Roubles.
200 sold goods to the amount of . .	500,000 each	100,000,000
500 ditto	50,000	25,000,000
1300 ditto	5,000	6,500,000
Total		131,500,000

A variety of articles, too heavy to be brought into the open market, as iron, honey,

Digitized by Google

potass, &c., and which are sold wholesale, are not included in the above estimates.

At eight o'clock in the evening, I pursued my journey to Cazan, thinking it preferable to travel during the cool of the night. By this arrangement I was no loser in other respects, as I was just as well able to make my observations on the face of the country as in the day time; and as to the picturesque, I am willing to relinquish this point to some future Dr. Syntax; this I do with the less regret, as during the earlier part of my life, I saw enough of the sublime and beautiful to enable my imagination to create the most delightful pictures at pleasure; I shall not, however, attempt to delineate these ideal representations, which, I apprehend, would scarcely excite the same interest in the minds of my readers.

The only incident worth noticing during this night, was a violent quarrel between two drivers, which, however, terminated without either blows or bloodshed. At nine in the morning we arrived at the village of Liskova, the residence of his highness the Prince of Georgia, a descendant of the former sovereigns of that

Digitized by Google

country, and to whose mansion, having letters of introduction from his sister, the Princess Bores Galitzin, I immediately drove.

I was here received in the kindest and most cordial manner by the prince and his amiable daughter. The former was much surprised to see me, as he had, only a few days before, noticed, in the Petersburg Journal, a statement of my being a visitor in that city. His intelligence in this respect was also no small matter of surprise to myself, as it was the first time of my being aware of any notice having been taken of me by the publications of this country.

After a princely dinner, my noble host's eldest son, a very amiable officer, who happened to be at home on leave, did me the honour to take me in their barge, which had about twenty oars, to Macarief, where the fair was formerly held, and which I felt desirous to visit. After rowing down a small river for a mile and a half, we entered the Volga, and soon reached the point of debarkation on its opposite bank. On commencing our journey, I remarked, that the men tossed up their oars,

Digitized by Google

and was informed, that this constituted part of a ceremony, the object of which was to implore the protection of the Almighty on their voyage; the remaining part of this ceremony consisted of taking off their hats and devoutly crossing themselves.

We landed at a spot adjoining the Monastery of Macarief, and were received by some of the monks, who conducted us over the more interesting parts of the building. In one of the rooms, a party of these holy people were occupied at the very grave game of nine-pins, but played in a manner distinct from what I had before witnessed. The ball was suspended over the centre pin by a cord, long enough to allow it to sweep the pins, and being taken out to its fullest distance, was then propelled upon the latter in such a direction as the science of the game prompted. We afterwards repaired to the apartment of the superior, who, notwithstanding the great defalcation of their revenues in consequence of the removal of the fair, which used to bring them many a good donation from the rich and pious merchants who attended it, entertained us with

Digitized by Google

excellent wine, preserved fruits, tea, &c. We were informed, that the great reduction of their income had compelled them to a proportionate diminution of the number of their brotherhood, a point of information which, I must admit, excited little commiseration in my bosom, as I felt assured, that their talents might be better employed in the more active pursuits to which they would be obliged to resort. I ought to feel grateful for the personal attention they paid myself; on leaving they accompanied us to the water side, and presented me with a print of their monastery.*

The buildings where the fair was formerly held, were constructed of wood, and at the time of my visit, had nearly all been removed. A greater part of them, however, were destroyed by fire, about seven years since.

About sun-set we recrossed the Volga, amidst scenery, which the young prince described, as beautiful in the extreme.

The following day was very stormy, with frequent thunder and lightning, so much so

* Vide, Frontispiece, Vol. II.

Digitized by Google

as to deter the young princess and her friend, the Princess of Chercass, from joining the family party until tea-time, when I ventured to rally them on their timidity, and which they bore with the greatest good humour. I have frequently remarked the apprehensions of the ladies of Russia in this respect.

The prince, who is a widower, has only this one daughter, now about twenty-five years of age, and so remarkably fond of retirement, that it is said, she will neither marry nor enter into fashionable life, although, from her personal attractions and her elevated rank, she is entitled to the highest pretensions in both these respects. Her chief amusement and occupation is in reading, and instructing two young females, whom she has taken under her protection; she is also the Lady Bountiful of the neighbourhood. Although she prefers retirement on the banks of the Volga, and shuns society from home, her manners are by no means reserved; on the contrary, her conversation is animated and agreeable, and she appears to take a peculiar pleasure in paying all possible attention to her father's visitors.

Digitized by Google

On Sunday, the 22d, I accompanied the family to the village church, where the choir of singers were all domestic servants of the prince, who has himself a considerable taste for music, and an excellent bass voice, with which he frequently accompanies them.

After dinner I had the pleasure of attending the young princesses in a ramble to their gardens, beyond the village. In our way, they stopped to converse with a poor woman, who was sinking rapidly under that painful disease cancer. The amiable princess regretted that her knowlege of medicine was too limited to allow her to administer to the relief of her villagers as she could wish; a circumstance she the more regretted, as the family had been for some time without a medical man. In England we should say, that here was a good opening for a son of Esculapius, as the village contains a population of not less than six thousand *souls* with *male* bodies attached to them; many of whom are reputed to be very rich, in consequence of their extensive traffic in grain.

Soon after midnight I took leave of this

Digitized by Google

charming family, and proceeded on my journey not, however, without carrying with me additional and substantial evidences of their hospitality, in the shape of provisions. They also did me the honour of pressingly inviting me to make them a longer visit on my return, which gratified me much, although I had but little expectation of passing that way again.

About nine o'clock in the morning, when about a mile from the town of Vasali-Soursk, my ears were saluted by the sound of my fore-axletree breaking down, succeeded by the ominous "*Stoe, stoe!*" (stop, stop!) of the postillion. I was consequently detained two hours before a temporary axletree could be procured, to enable me to reach the town. I congratulated myself, however, that the accident did not occur in the middle of a stage, in a dark night, and with the agreeable accompaniments of "thunder, lightning, or of rain."

We were provided with a spare axletree, in contemplation of an accident of this kind, and which, after we reached the town, was attached with all possible expedition. In the

Digitized by Google

mean time, I went to the river side, to endeavour to ascertain, whether any water conveyance was to be met with from hence to Cazan, as this town is one of the ports, as they term it, where vessels put in for shelter or trade. My enquiry, however, proved abortive.

On my return I found the pavoshka ready, and immediately set forward, but had not proceeded many yards when the other axletree gave way. This was truly provoking, as I had no second spare one with me; and soon found that the good people around me were disposed to make the most of my misfortune. At length, I had the luck to meet with a decent person, who could speak French, to whom I expressed my determination to bundle myself and broken-down carriage into a boat, and proceed by water. He replied, what I well knew before, that there was no boat in the port, but that he would talk to the people, and get my repairs done as reasonably as possible. I assured him, however, that, sooner than submit to imposition, I would wait until a boat arrived, or, selling my carriage, proceed by a post telega. At

Digitized by Google

length, he bargained with them to put me on a new axletree, for about double the sum it would have cost at Moscow; this, however, detained me until six o'clock, at which hour I had the pleasure of setting off in the rain, that continued throughout the night, and made the bad roads still worse.

About seven in the morning we arrived at the town of Tcheboesar, said to have been built by a robber of that name, situated in a deep valley, close to the Volga, of which it is a principal port, and containing about five thousand inhabitants. The Russian merchants of this place carry on an extensive trade with the neighbouring tribes of the Tschuwashes and Tscheremishes, who inhabit villages peculiar to themselves, being a distinct race of Finnish extraction, and not Tartars, as some have represented them. The chief commodities they supply, are corn, honey, wax, and the bark of the lime-tree, which is made use of to cover houses and kabitkas, as well as for other purposes. They also trade largely in the skins of animals, particularly of squirrels, which they shoot with light guns, made at

Digitized by Google

Toula for the purpose, and which carry a single shot, about the size of a pea. This place is also celebrated for its excellent bricks, which are exported to various places on the Volga.

Although I had been disappointed in my previous attempts to find a water conveyance to Cazan, I did not give up the point; and notwithstanding my Tartar showed himself averse to it, determined to prosecute my enquiry at this place; and at length, through the medium of a gentleman whom the Prince of Georgia had wished me to call upon, I found a boat belonging to Simbirsk, which was returning empty, after discharging a cargo of salt higher up the river, and which I ascertained to be just wide enough to receive my equipage. I agreed with the captain of this vessel to land me near the mouth of the Casanka, a distance of a hundred miles, for eight roubles. At one in the afternoon we commenced our voyage, having a very fine day, and a fresh breeze, which, towards evening, sunk into a calm, so that we were obliged to take to our oars, with which

Digitized by Google

we proceeded merrily enough, the crew singing, as they advanced, their national airs in concert, so as to remind me forcibly of the Canadian boat-song.

Our harmony was, at length, interrupted by an occurrence which, for a time, excited some apprehension on my part. About midnight I perceived our crew leave off rowing, and commence a violent altercation, which, at first, I imagined arose from the wish of a part to go on shore for spirits. At length, however, the dispute increasing, my imagination began to operate, and to suggest the possibility, that I might be the subject of contention, and that they were deciding my fate; for I well knew that they would make little scruple of sacrificing me, could they derive any profit by it, and do it with impunity. I determined, therefore, to put myself on the guard. In taking my place on board, I had preferred the seat of my pavoshka, as being the most comfortable situation in the vessel; this served me as a kind of entrenchment, and having my postillion's pistols by my side, I put myself on the *qui vive*, prepared to mark

Digitized by Google

one or more of them, should any attempt be made to molest me; and which I hoped, in the event of the affair proving fatal to myself, might lead to their discovery and punishment. It can scarcely be wondered at that my apprehension should have been excited to this pitch, when it is recollected that this river was formerly the scene of the most horrid acts of piracy, and that such crimes are still occasionally perpetrated, particularly during the season of the fair of Nijni Novogorod.

Fortunately, however, my suspicions were groundless. After the squall had continued about an hour, it blew over; I was afterwards informed it was occasioned by a dispute respecting the division of some money they had made. When it concluded, the parties betook themselves to rowing and singing, as before. About seven in the morning I was landed, near the confluence of the Cazanka and the Volga, at the port of Bakalda, distant only six versts from Cazan. I here took horses, and arrived at the latter place about nine o'clock.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

Cazan—Interview with the acting governor—General Simanoff—Mr. Fuchs—Amusements of Trinity week—Pugatchef—The Admiralty—The University—Tartar School—Manners and character of the Cazan Tartars—Their education—Service at a Mosque—Tartar festivals—Entertainment at a Tartar merchant's — Tartar customs — Ingenuity—Commerce of Cazan—Kalmuc sheep—Unhealthiness of Cazan—Captain Ricord—Departure from Cazan—Religious processions.

My accommodations at Cazan were of the same kind as I had now become accustomed to, namely, a room, with a table, wooden chairs, and a frame to lay my mattress upon; in addition to which my apartment was freely ventilated by a deficiency of glass in the window, the replacement of which I urged in vain.

My first occupation was delivering my letters of introduction, particularly the one

Digitized by Google

directed to the governor, whom I had met with near Nijni Novogorod, and who had returned it to me with an addition of his own, and which I lost no time in presenting to the vice-governor, who, through the medium of his aid-de-camp, informed me that he would order one of the police to attend me wherever I might wish to go, and which appeared rather a novel mode of shewing civility to a stranger, especially as I could derive no information from him, in consequence of my being wholly unable to converse with a Russian. Independent of this, I felt myself treated by this gentlemen with much less respect than I had been accustomed to, as he received me in an outer room, and kept me standing during our interview. I could not avoid entertaining a suspicion that this behaviour had its motive, the more particularly as my letter was from no less a person than the governor-general of Moscow. This surmise was afterwards confirmed by my finding that this officer and the governor, to whom the introduction was addressed, were at variance, in consequence of the latter having rendered himself obnoxious

Digitized by Google

to the nobility of his government, and which was the reason of his journey to St. Petersburg.

I had no further communication with the vice-governor during my continuance at Cazan; but was fortunately provided with other letters of introduction, and amongst the rest, one to his excellency the senator, General Simanoff, who had been sent by the government to enquire into the misunderstanding before alluded to; this gentleman I found a sensible, friendly man, and his wife and family very amiable.

I had the gratification of spending the evening with Mr. Fuchs, who had on this day been elected rector of the University of Cazan, and who introduced me to several of the professors, who were assembled at his house on the occasion; in such society I could not fail to spend an agreeable evening.

Mr. F. presented me with a letter which had been forwarded to his address, from a friend in Moscow, and which detailed the various opinions of my acquaintance in that place, relative to my journey; some anticipated, that sickened by experience, it would terminate at Cazan;

Digitized by Google

while others, who knew me better, believed that I should accomplish all that I had proposed; I was happy to confirm the latter opinion, by expressing the satisfaction I had thus far derived, and assuring them, that I had met with less difficulty than I had contemplated.

Thursday, June 26th, I spent most of this day in exploring the town of Cazan, accompanied by M. Jobard, the professor of Greek at the university.

Cazan contains a population of about forty thousand, including the Tartars, who inhabit a separate part of the town, and are distinguished by their own customs and religion; the latter being Mahometan. During the winter time, the society of the place is said to be highly polished; at the time of my residence, however, most of the nobility were living at their country-seats; none remaining except those who were compelled to do so by professional avocations.

On the following day I accompanied Mr. Fuchs and his family to a promenade, held on account of Trinity week, which is kept as a

Digitized by Google

festival throughout Russia. The amusements consisted of rope-dancing, horsemanship, light, amusing comedies, and buffoonery. According to the report of superintending officers, the lower orders of people assembled on this occasion consumed fifteen hundred gallons of brandy, and five thousand of beer.

The spot were these amusements were held, was once the scene of a bloody battle, fought between the impostor, Pugatchef, and the Russians, commanded by General Michaelson, in the year 1774, and which terminated in the defeat of the former.

"This extraordinary man was born at a village on the banks of the Don. He was a common Cossack, and served in the wars against Prussia and the Turks; after which, being refused his discharge, subsequent to the siege of Bendor he deserted. After wandering about in different parts of the empire, he was taken, and sent to Cazan, for treasonable conversation; from whence he made his escape, and not long afterwards appeared in the character of Peter the Third,

Digitized by Google

at the head of numerous insurgents composed of Cossacks and dissenters.

"In the month of July, 1774, he advanced towards Cazan, burnt the town, murdered the principal inhabitants, and besieged the citadel, whither the governor, and some of the nobility, had taken shelter, until he was forced to raise the siege, by the approach of Colonel Michaelson, at the head of a considerable body of troops, when after repeated engagements during three days, he was forced to retire across the Volga, with a chosen band of Cossacks, where he was again reinforced by numerous troops of Cossacks, as well as by numberless discontented peasants.

"After various successes and defeats, he was at last betrayed by some of his most confidential followers, from a promise of pardon for their treachery, and delivered up to a body of troops under the command of General Suvaroff, stationed on the banks of the Yaik, which is now called the Ural; from this place he was conducted to the commander-in-chief, Count Panim at Simbirsk, and then to Moscow,

Digitized by Google

where, after his trial and confession, he was executed, on the 21st of January, 1775. Thus terminated the rebellion of the fifth and last impostor that had assumed the title of Peter the Third."

On the 28th I dined with the senator Simanoff, in company with all the principal government officers, and also of the governor of Viatka, whose daughter was married to the vice-governor of Cazan. After dinner I visited the monument lately erected in commemoration of the taking of this town from the Tartars in 1552. It is of a pyramidical form, with a church in the centre of its base, and is situated on an elevated spot of ground, where the Russian warriors who fell in the contest were buried.

The following day, being Sunday, I spent chiefly with Mr. Fuchs. In the evening I visited the admiralty, established by Peter the Great, on the Cazanka, at a distance of three versts from the city, where smaller vessels are built for the protection of the Caspian sea trade. The works admit of the building of sixty-four gun ships if required. Peter shewed his usual sagacity in the selection of

Digitized by Google

a dock-yard at this point, for it is in the midst of the finest growths of oak timber which this empire posseses, and which is cut and transported to the water side in the winter by a class of men named Lashmas. These people are chiefly Tartars, and in consequence of this duty, exempted from military service.

At this place I went on board a yacht, built at Tver, which name it bears, by the order of Catharine the Second, to allow herself and court to navigate the magnificent Volga. She had been ship-rigged, and measured one hundred feet in length, sixteen and a half in breadth, and five deep in the hold. This interesting relic, which is now materially decayed, is about to undergo some reparation, in order to preserve her from falling to pieces.

I occupied the Monday and Tuesday in visiting the cathedral, fortress, and other interesting parts of the town.

Cazan contains a celebrated university, which holds under its inspection the public schools of no less than sixteen governments. Its chief officer, or curator, resides at St. Petersburg; there are, however, two resident

Digitized by Google

sub-curators; the one devoted to its economy, and named the director; the other to science, and named the rector; the latter department being divided into four faculties, at the head of each of which is a dean. These again comprise twenty-six professors, with twelve adjuncts, who teach all the various branches of human philosophy. The number of students are, at this time, only a hundred, which is to be attributed to the circumstance of the sons of the nobility being almost entirely brought up to the army, and those of the class below them to the navy and public offices; so that the poorest gentry only embrace the literary profession; besides, those who can afford it, prefer giving their sons private educations.

The sons of the Russian clergy are all, *ex necessario*, priests, and brought up in the universities established exclusively for that purpose, and which are termed *academiæ spirituales*, of which there are four principal ones; namely, at St. Petersburg, Moscow, Kief, and Cazan, with minor ones in each bishopric. There is a bishopric attached to every three governments.

Digitized by Google

On Wednesday I went to a Tartar school, where, before being permitted to enter, my shoes were taken off, after which I was seated on a low box, with a pillow placed upon it. The *molla*, or superintendent of the school, who is also the priest of the parish to which it belongs, called up several of the boys, who repeated passages from the Koran, chanting them out with a strong nasal tone. This school contained about fifty boys.

It may not be uninteresting to enter into some details, illustrative of the manners and characters of the Cazan Tartars.

The traveller, who visits Cazan, cannot fail to be impressed with the observation that the Tartars, generally, are a more civilized people than their Russian masters. The Tartar who is unable to read and write is held in very little estimation by his countrymen; and hence it is a leading consideration with the fathers of families, to send their children to school at an early age, with a view to their being instructed in reading, writing, and the principles of religion; and to promote these points, every mosque has its proper school attached to it.

Digitized by Google

The expences attendant on these schools are defrayed in an unusual manner: some rich Tartar charges himself with them for the current year, and which he deems a service acceptable to his God; thus practically looking for his reward in heaven. There are eight mosques, and consequently eight school-houses, in the Tartar Town of Cazan, each of which accommodates its masters and pupils with lodging and board. They are always under the supreme direction of the clergyman of the mosque, with subordinate masters or ushers under him, who receive no fixed stipend, but content themselves with the donations of the friends of their pupils, consisting chiefly of corn and other necessaries of life, with some little money, and, on great holidays, the occasional present of a robe.

The books employed in the instruction of the boys are ranged on shelves against the walls, and intermingled with various implements of trade; and such is the spirit of industry, that the masters may be often observed, at the same time that they are in-

Digitized by Google

structing their pupils, occupied in mending their shoes.

Children are generally admitted between the ages of seven and eight, and continue at least five years; and those who are devoted to the church, or the sciences, much longer. The system of education commences with reading abridged sentences of the Koran: this is followed by books of Tartar poetry, explanatory of the sacred volume, and afterwards by the study of a work entitled Mourhamid Essendi, which contains a variety of commercial precepts in the Arabic language. Many also learn the Persian language, either with a view to commercial relations, or as a matter of taste. It is not a little singular, however, that few become acquainted with the Russian, notwithstanding the intimate connexion that must exist between the two people. The reason they assign for this is by no means honourable to the latter, as they assert, the party who acquires that language is sure to become worthless.

The scholars generally take their lessons

Digitized by Google

seated on their beds, with their legs crossed under them, and read in a singing tone of voice, which is both plaintive and disagreeable. They have one common pot for boiling their provision, into which each puts his portion, one being appointed to superintend the cooking. Each individual is at liberty to eat when he pleases, although the more usual hour of breakfast is eight in the morning, and of dinner six in the evening.

The females receive a similar kind of education, under the superintendance of the wives of the priests.

On Friday I took an opportunity of visiting a mosque during divine service, this being the chief day of the week when it is performed. My shoes were here also taken off at the entrance. The service did not last more than half an hour, during which I noticed that the people were in great agitation, occasionally jumping up, and then sitting or lying down, as the molla read particular parts of the Koran. Women, of course, are not allowed to attend.

The Tartars observe four feasts in the year:

Digitized by Google

Two of them are national; one intended for the men, the other for the women. The former takes place in the spring, and lasts a week; during its continuance the people enjoy themselves in wrestling, which is their favourite amusement, and consists in each combatant taking his opponent by the sash, and in this way endeavouring to overthrow him; also in races, both on foot and horseback. The latter feast appears chiefly intended to congregate the sexes, with a view to matrimonial speculations, and consists of dancing, singing, and music. It is held in summer, and lasts one or more weeks.

The first ecclesiastical feast is the Ramazan, which is preceded by a fast of twenty-eight days, no one eating or drinking, except in the night time. At the conclusion of the month, the feast commences, and is characterized by a compensating indulgence in good living for three days. On the first of these days, the men all go out into a plain near the town, and, at the rising of the sun, perform their devotions, while lying on their faces.

The other feast, named Beiram, takes place

Digitized by Google

in about two months after the former. It lasts only one day, and chiefly consists of a sacrifice in commemoration of Abraham's obedience to God. Every master kills, with his own hand, some animal: for instance, a sheep for one man; a cow, ox, or a camel, for seven men; such parts of which, as are not consumed by the family themselves, are distributed to the priests and the poor. In killing the animal, its head is turned towards Mecca, the man who performs this office using an Arabian expression, signifying that the sacrifice is made "in the name of God." The people then dip their fingers into the first blood that flows, and mark with it the forehead, nose, chin, and cheeks; this they imagine protects them from the devil.

A friend, who had been dining by invitation at the house of a Tartar merchant, favoured me with the following description of his entertainment. On the party arriving at the house, the host, dressed in a linen robe that hung down to his heels, came to the outer door to receive them, and conducted them, with an easy politeness, into the dining apartment. He now, with his own hand, proceeded to

Digitized by Google

place a variety of dried fruits, cedar-nuts, &c. on the table, which was covered with a Persian cloth, grotesquely worked. The merchant's wife then made her *entrée*, when the lady visitors rose and embraced her. Dinner was next brought in, and the party sat down to it, with the exception of their hostess, who retired behind a curtain in a corner of the room, to dine by herself, it being the custom of the women never to be seen eating by the men.

The first dish was soup, strongly flavoured with onions and vinegar, and having small oblong cakes, filled with minced-meat, floating in it, and which was eaten with wooden spoons, those made of any other material being forbidden. After this came a grilled fowl, with salted cucumbers, and which was succeeded by the remainder of the dinner. As soon as dinner concluded, tea was introduced, served up with brandy and rum instead of milk; the Tartar himself using the rum only, in consequence of brandy having been interdicted by Mahomet. Sweetmeats and Don wines were drank by the guests, both before and after tea. The merchant proved

Digitized by Google

himself an agreeable, intelligent man, answering all the questions submitted to him respecting the customs and commercial relations of his countrymen, in an unreserved and satisfactory manner. On taking leave, the party found a sledge provided for them; and his son, as a mark of particular respect, drove them home, singing, en the way, a variety of Tartar songs for their amusement.

The Tartars, without exception, sleep on feather-beds, which renders their skin more delicate and tender than that of their Russian neighbours; they consequently are unable to bear the baton or knout without greater injury; and have such horror of these punishments, that, to avoid them, they will frequently abjure their religion, and become Christians, a conversion which is accepted in mitigation of their sentence. This people, however, very seldom commit any of the higher crimes, as murder, or such as subject them to the knout; notwithstanding, they have no objection to stealing when a favourable opportunity offers, and particularly horses, to the flesh of which, as a food, they are ex-

Digitized by Google

tremely partial. They are also, many of them, very ingenious in the forgery of bank-notes, or any written documents, which they imitate so exactly with the pen, that the deception can with difficulty be detected.

The commerce of Cazan is chiefly carried on by Tartars, many of whose merchants are exceedingly rich, and have relations with all the principal cities of the empire. The trade consists of soap, leather, potass, skins, wax, tallow, &c. The quantity of soap manufactured in the place is from two hundred to two hundred and fifty thousand poods per annum; the soda used in making it being the produce of the neighbourhood, and the oil brought from Astracan. Even the Tartar princes do not deem it derogatory to enter into trade; and it is said that the best soap is manufactured by the Prince Samanoff, and has his name stamped upon it. Tartar princes, however, are not to be deemed of equal importance with those of Europe. The Czar Alexie advanced to this dignity all who embraced Christianity; a stratagem which procured him many thousand proselytes. Strahlenberg says, that he

Digitized by Google

saw in one village, eighteen such noble families, who all lived by tillage and husbandry.

There is also at Cazan a manufactory of gunpowder, that supplies all Siberia; and another of cloth for the army, belonging to Mr. Osokin, and which has been in existence since the time of Peter the Great. It employs a thousand workmen, and can produce a hundred and thirty thousand arshines of cloth annually, and which sell to government for three roubles and fifteen copecks per arshine. The wool employed is the growth of the governments of Orenburg, Simbirsk, and Cazan. Many sheep are brought to Cazan from the former province, which are remarkable for their large fat tails. A friend of mine, who kept some of these sheep at this place, found their tails degenerate, probably in consequence of the change of living, and the want of the nourishing food of their native plains. They have also been observed to lose the bulk of their tails when driven a long journey, the fat being absorbed in consequence of the increased circulation which is excited. This variety of sheep is of large

Digitized by Google

size, with long hanging ears, and the wool of a brown colour, bordering on the nature of hair, and very long. They soon become unhealthy at Cazan, the marshy ground in its neighbourhood exciting disease of the lungs.

On account of the extent of marshy ground around it, and which is frequently overflown, Cazan is by no means a healthy situation. Agues, rheumatism, scrofula, scurvy, and diseases of the skin, are prevalent; and the latter are frequently extended amongst the lower classes by the communication afforded in the warm baths, which are indiscriminately resorted to.

The government is much infested by mosquitos, gnats, bugs, beetles, rats, mice, and innumerable snakes.

On Saturday, July 5th, it was communicated to me that Captain Ricord the late governor of Kamschatka, had arrived at Cazan, in his way from that country. This induced me to defer my departure a day longer, in order that I might avail myself of the opportunity an invitation I had to meet

Digitized by Google

him at dinner would afford, of eliciting information respecting my future projects. I had the pleasure of finding him an intelligent gentleman, well conversant with the English language. He acquainted me with the death of the father of the lady of Captain Cochrane, and a variety of particulars respecting that gentleman's marriage and residence in Kamschatka.

After spending the whole evening in the company of Captain Ricord, I took leave of my friends in Cazan, and resumed my journey for Siberia.

I had hastened my departure, in order to avoid being present at a grand ceremony that was to commence on the following day, consisting of a procession of the clergy and an immense concourse of the people, of all descriptions, many of whom had travelled more than two hundred versts from the country to be present thereat. On this occasion, the "Image of the Mother of God of Smolensko" is brought to Cazan from the Monastery of Semiosernoe, distant about eighteen versts, and where it is kept during eleven months of the year, pre-

Digitized by Google

ceded by flags and images from the various churches, and which are carried out to invite her ladyship into town. On arriving in the city, her ladyship is first conducted to the cathedral, where she remains three nights; after this she visits, in grand procession, all the other churches, spending one day and night in each parish, which period is almost wholly occupied in making calls upon its inhabitants, a greater or lesser time being spent in each house, in proportion to the respectability of its owner, or the grateful liberality with which he repays the favour conferred upon him. In each house she is received with all possible respect and veneration, the rooms and passages being strewn with carpeting, matting, or boughs. She is conducted, on entering the house, to the apartment where the patron image is kept, and placed on a table, in an upright position, with wax candles in front of her. Prayers are now said in her presence, after which the attendant priests proceed to regale themselves with tea, brandy and wine, or, according to the time of the day, with dinner, or more substantial refreshments.

Digitized by Google

During the period of paying her visits, the bells are continually ringing, accompanied by every other demonstration of joy on the part of the inhabitants. One day is occupied with visiting the gates of the town, in commemoration of her having, in the year 1654, arrested a plague, which was proving very fatal in the city. The period of her annual residence in Cazan is one month, and the money collected on the occasion about twenty-five thousand roubles: this is the perquisite of the priests of her monastery.

There is another feast which takes place in this city on the 8th of July, in honour of the image called the Mother of God of Cazan.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XX.

Departure from Cazan—Author on spare diet—Malmyche—The Author suspected to be a spy—Okhane—Perm—Mines, &c. in that neighbourhood—Salt Wells of Solicamsk—Governor Kriegner—Departure from Perm for Ekaterinburg — Bilinbaefskoi — The Ural Mountains—The Author's feelings on entering Asia—Ekaterinburg—Mr. M.'s country residence—Gold Sand—Coining of copper money—Exiles of Siberia—General Simanoff and his lady — Preparations for leaving Ekaterinburg—Description of the town—Camichloff—Tumen—The Tobol—Arrival at Tobolsk.

I LEFT Cazan at midnight, and was detained for nearly half an hour at the gate of the city, by some explanations between the soldiers and my postillion, the nature of which I could not comprehend. The following day, July 7th, proved very fine, but extremely hot and dusty. About two o'clock I arrived at a Tartar village, where I expected to have procured a dinner, but in vain; so that I was compelled to con-

Digitized by Google

tent myself with dry bread and quass. This was truly a contrast to the enjoyment of the preceding day, when I had partaken of all the luxuries of an opulent city, in the society of its great and learned; I now was doomed to eat my humble fare in solitude, at least without a soul to whom I could communicate a sentiment. And yet I smiled at my crust, and reflected how little man required, provided his mind was content, and so constituted as to bend itself to circumstances. Perhaps there was not a better subject to philosophize over than a dry crust; so I indulged my thoughts freely in their lucubrations, and when my hunger was appeased, recommenced my journey, with the anticipation of a better dinner on the morrow.

The road was rough and hilly, and the villages chiefly inhabited by Tartars, whose children occasionally followed us with wild strawberries for sale. This reminded me of the gypsy children who run after the coaches near Shooter's Hill, and in other parts of Kent. I could not fail to remark throughout this journey, that the Tartars appeared far more advanced in civili-

Digitized by Google

zation than the Russians, were more expert in what they attempted, more civil in their attentions, more tractable in their manners, and from their villages I uniformly found myself accommodated with the best horses and drivers.

On Tuesday, the 8th, the day was hot, but the roads much improved, although dusty. I was again disappointed in my dinner, as neither fish, flesh, nor fowl were to be procured, with the exception of horse flesh, which they did not presume to offer me, or I certainly should have ventured upon an experiment with it. I again, therefore, smiled over my bread and quass, and hoped for better times. The reader will perceive that I had been unlucky enough to leave Cazan without my usual travelling stock of provision, which was attributable to two causes — negligence and modesty. The latter quality is one which experience had long taught me that a traveller is better without, and yet I, some how or other, in the present instance, allowed it to interfere with my comforts. The fact was that I had taken my usual precaution, at Cazan, of requesting a friend to lay me in the necessary stores;

Digitized by Google

he had purchased them, but imagining I should not set off at the time I had fixed, had neglected ordering them to be dressed. The friend with whom I had supped, aware of my deficiency, most kindly urged me to take some of the remnants of his feast; but this I resolutely declined, affirming, that I should certainly meet with supplies at the different post-stations; and I believe my friend did not doubt but that this would be the case.

About five o'clock I arrived at the town of Malmyche, in the government of Viatka, where, after taking my tea, and while preparing to set off, I was accosted by a man, who with difficulty made me understand that a gentleman would soon arrive who could speak French, and who shewed great anxiety to have me stay until he came. Thinking I might gain from this person some information respecting the country I was travelling through, I was induced to accede to the request, and accompanied him into his house, which adjoined the one at which I had been taking my tea. As soon as I was seated, he almost forced me to take wine with him, which I bore with all pos-

Digitized by Google

sible patience, expecting every instant the arrival of his friend. Time passed away, however, without his appearance, during which I frequently heard my entertainer, with apparent anxiety, looking out of the window; and when I showed a disposition to move, he exclaimed "*sechas! sechas!*" which means "directly." At length, in about an hour, and to the satisfaction of both, the gentleman arrived, who, after a conversation with the other, shook me heartily by the hand, and laughing immoderately at the same time, began to talk to me in the German language, and I had the mortification of finding that he could not converse with me in French; so that I had been losing my time in waiting for him. I therefore, after a few more hearty shakes of the hand from my laughing acquaintance, who was a tall, stout man, again prepared to recommence my journey.

I afterwards received an explanation of this mysterious proceeding from a gentleman whom I met in Siberia, and who had his account from the man himself.

The person who was so anxious for my com-

Digitized by Google

munication with the gentleman who was to speak French, had charge of the post-station of the place with the title of expeditor, and very sagaciously, in consequence of my not looking him in the face when he spoke to me, took it into his head that I was a spy, and although he was informed that I was blind, observed that it was impossible a blind person could be travelling in the way I appeared to travel. He was so convinced of the correctness of his surmise that he lost no time in sending for the laughing gentleman, who was a brandy distiller, and who really was able to converse in French—in a morning; but had most unfortunately so muddled his organ of languages by the vapour of his stills, or perhaps some more immediate application of their contents, that no other resource remained to make himself understood than what his superior knowledge of the Russ or German languages afforded.

About ten versts from this town we crossed the river Viatka, on a raft, after which the roads to the next station proved very heavy and sandy; they improved, however, on the fol-

Digitized by Google

lowing day. I was again obliged to content myself with bread and quass for dinner; but I felt in excellent health, and my mind was so deeply interested in my present and future proceedings, that I merely felt anxious to satisfy the cravings of nature. Besides I had always the power of preparing myself a refreshing cup of tea. In the afternoon we reached the town of Okhane, situated near the fine and rapid river Kama, which, about three miles after leaving this place I crossed on a raft, in company with various other carriages. This river abounds with the sterlet; but they are not so fine, or of the same colour, with those caught in the Volga.

On Thursday, the 10th, I arrived at the city of Perm, and immediatly drove to the residence of the governor, for whom I had letters, and who received me in the most friendly manner, anticipating my request to be recommended to good quarters, by offering me the best in the town—at his own house. In the evening I accompanied a gentleman to visit a copper manufactory in the vicinity of the city, where the varibus processes of smelting

Digitized by Google

and cleaning the ore, and forming it into bars, are carried on.

This copper manufactory, named Molovitche, belongs to the crown, as well as another (Tugovski) at the distance of thirty-five versts from the city. The copper of this government is excellent, and highly esteemed for its malleability; about twelve thousand poods are produced annually, three thousand workmen being occupied in the various operations connected with its mines, a great proportion of them in cutting down wood and preparing it for the use of the furnaces: the wages of these people remind one of olden times, being, exclusive of provisions, only about a halfpenny a day.

There are, beside these government works, various private manufactories scattered throughout this government, particularly on the Ural Mountains, where the ore is procured. There are also many iron-works belonging both to government and private individuals.

In the neighbourhood of Solicamsk many

Digitized by Google

salt wells exist, the property of Baron Strogonoff, the Princess of Charovskin, and others, the water of which is drawn up from a depth of forty sagenes, or two hundred and eighty feet, by means of spiral pumps, and afterwards exposed to evaporation; the salt is then transported to Nijni Novogorod in vessels that carry from fifty to sixty thousand poods.

On the following day, I amused myself with exploring the town, the streets of which are not paved. There is a pleasant promenade on one side, a mile in length, and which is called the boulevard, and was made a few years since by a late governor.

There is a grand procession on this spot, on the 13th of May, which in the year 1819 was attended in sledges, a heavy fall of snow having occurred on the previous evening, a circumstance very unusual so late in the season.

The governor being from home, I dined *tête a tête* with his nephew.

Soon after noon on the following day it began to rain heavily, accompanied by loud

Digitized by Google

thunder and vivid lightning, which proved fatal to two persons in an adjoining village, and materially injured five others.

The town of Perm is well situated, being built on an acclivity from the eastern bank of the Kama; its climate, however, is very variable, and generally much colder than Cazan.

At this place a military hospital has lately been erected; and like all other government towns in Russia, it possesses a gymnasium, as well as some minor schools established by the present governor, on the Lancasterian plan.

On Sunday, July 1, after dinner we visited the house of a Danish medical gentleman, who had dined with us at the governor's, and who regaled us with melon and coffee, and shewed us his neat garden and hothouse. He informed us that Kotzebue had rested in this house when on his way to Tobolsk.

On our return I recommenced my journey, after taking leave of my kind host, Governor Kriegner. This gentleman is a Livonian, and a married man, although his lady does not reside with him; having, much to his regret, declined accompanying him to Siberia. He

Digitized by Google

has proved himself particularly attentive to the interests of his government, the emperor having, in acknowledgement, presented him with one of the more respectable orders of knighthood. He has in particular made great improvement in the road and posting arrangements, his government being, in these respects, perhaps, the best regulated in the empire.

The governor is particularly fond of music, and often amuses himself with his *viol d'amour*, a large violin with seven strings, on which he plays delightfully.

On arriving at a Tartar village, the first post-station after leaving Perm, we found some of the iron work of the wheels of the pavoshka broken. This in the course of an hour the Tartar blacksmiths repaired. The remainder of this and the following day proved windy and rainy, which rendered the roads very heavy, and in the middle of the night one of my axletrees broke, and was replaced by a spare one which I had with me. At dinner time I arrived at a post-station a hundred and sixty versts from Perm, and two hundred from Ekaterinburg. At this point the Ural Moun-

Digitized by Google

tains are said to commence, although for some distance nothing more than slighter hills, or undulations of ground, are perceptible; little occurs worthy of the name of mountain until you arrive at Bilinbaefskoi, within fifty-two versts of Ekaterinburg.

On the 15th the weather was fairer. I was now crossing the Ural Mountains, which separate Europe and Asia, and my heart bounded with joy that I had accomplished so considerable a part of my journey, and was entering, as it were, upon a new world, a world of strangers, with Providence only as my guide. I had now succeeded in what had been, for many years, one of the most ardent objects of my wishes, but which I had little expectation of realizing—a desire of visiting the fourth quarter of the globe. The satisfaction I felt is indescribable, and served to animate me with increased zeal to perseverance in my future projects. I almost imagined that a supernatural power was imparted to me, and that I had only to wave my wand, and will it, and every obstacle, every difficulty, would give way before me. With my mind thus

Digitized by Google

enthusiastically interested, I arrived at Ekaterinburg.

Before entering this place, which is situated at the commencement of the declivity of the Asiatic or eastern side of the Ural Mountains, I was sensible of a material change in the atmosphere, which had become colder by many degrees; this, however, as there had been much rain previously, and the weather had now cleared up, was probably to be attributed to an increase of evaporation, or other accidental causes.

I had three letters of introduction, on which I depended for securing the best accommodations the place would afford, and I immediately addressed myself for their delivery. The first was to the civil commander of the place, who received me with politeness; but, as he only spoke Russ and German, I could not explain my wishes to him. The second was to a gentleman who was ill in bed, and, consequently, unable to see me. The gentleman to whom my last letter was addressed was fortunately at home, and could speak English. He kindly offered to accommodate

Digitized by Google

me in his own house, an opportunity I thankfully availed myself of, there being no respectable public accommodation in the place. This gentleman, a German, and superintendent of a government manufactory of marble vases, was entertaining a small party of friends at supper, some of whom understood French, so that I was enabled to collect some information from them. Among other points, my observations of the greater coldness of the climate here were confirmed, it being stated, that during the last winter the thermometer stood, at Ekaterinburg, at forty degrees of frost, equal to sixty-eight degrees below zero, of Fahrenheit.

On the following day, having letters for Mr. M——, an English gentleman who resided in the country, at ten miles distance, I drove over to see him. I was ushered into the presence of three ladies, who in vain attempted to converse with me in the Russian and German languages; Mr. M——, however, soon entered the room, and pressed me in so warm a manner to spend a few days with him, that I could not deny myself the gratification.

Digitized by Google

This gentleman, who has resided many years in Russia, is possessed of great mechanical genius; and, as a remuneration for his services to the government, has received a grant of the fine tract of land and village which he now occupies, on the condition of his establishing there a manufactory of cutlery, and instructing a certain number of government slaves in that trade.

The estate comprises about two square miles, and the village, which is named Istock, is most delightfully situated, being excellently watered by different rivers, and abounding with wood, game, fish, and the most luxurious verdure.

Mr. M—— had, for some years, been much occupied by government in putting up steam-engines in this part of Siberia.

In this happy retreat I had the pleasure of spending several days, during which I enjoyed frequent walks in the country and neighbouring woods, in company with the ladies of the family; a part of the time was rainy, and these days were agreeably passed away in Mr. M——'s library, which contained a choice

Digitized by Google

selection of English books, and which an English lady, who had been a companion to his daughters, was kind enough to read to me. The society of this lady was truly valuable to me, although she had the misfortune to be extremely deaf.

The family of Mr. M—— consisted of his lady and two daughters, and his son, a boy of eight years of age. It is singular that neither Mrs. M—— nor the young ladies had any knowledge of English; and, what is still more surprising, Mr. M—— was unable to converse with his own daughters in any language!

During my residence in this neighbourhood, General Simanoff, whom I have before mentioned, as being at Cazan during my stay in that place, arrived at Ekaterinburg, to inspect the mines in its vicinity, but, perhaps, more particularly to examine into the nature of a kind of sand, lately discovered in this country, and which has become a new source of great wealth to the government, being richly loaded with gold: in short, since its discovery, the former gold mine has been discontinued working, a measure which, how-

Digitized by Google

ever, had been long anticipated, as its produce was scarcely equivalent to the expences.

The value of this sand was first detected by a German of the name of Herman, who, coming into this country on some special commission, and being informed that some boys had found large pieces of native gold in the sand, near the surface of the earth, went to the spot, and ascertained that its sand contained many particles of gold. The discovery, however, was neglected until the year 1816 or 1817, when, on farther research, a still richer sand was found, which could be collected at the rate of three roubles for every zolotinck of gold; whereas the gold procured from the Berezooskia mine was at the comparative expence of ten roubles.

The sand is found in strata of from six inches to three feet in thickness, sometimes lying close to the surface, at other times at the depth of a fathom from it, or at any intermediate depth, but generally underneath a bed of clay; and occasionally two or three strata are found. Masses of native gold, nearly a pound in weight, have been found in

Digitized by Google

it, and it is generally combined with quartz; it is not improbable that the sand is formed from decomposed material of this kind. The gold is separated by washing the sand, for which purpose it is spread upon inclined wooden planes, over which a gentle stream of water is passed, the sand being kept in continued agitation; by this means the sand is carried off, while the more ponderous gold remains behind. Mr. M——, however, has lately invented a mode of washing, by which the process is effected with a tenth of the labour of the old process. The proportion of gold contained in the sand varies from three zolotincks to a quarter of one in every hundred poods, which are equal to three thousand six hundred pounds weight, English.

It is evident that the gold thus found in combination with quartz, is the result of the decompositions of the neighbouring mountains, the alluvia of which has been washed down into the plains below, and thus disposed into strata. All the specimens found on Mr. M——'s estate confirm this opinion.

In Anson's voyage, gold is said to have been

Digitized by Google

discovered in a similar manner in the mountains of Brazil, near Rio Janeiro: "great quantities of it were annually washed from the hills, and left amongst the sand and gravel which remained in the valleys, after the running off or evaporation of the water."

There is at Ekaterinburg a considerable manufactory of copper money, producing annually coin to the value of about half a million of roubles, which are chiefly sent to St. Petersburg. I did not examine this mint, as the workmen, on my return from Mr. M.'s, were occupied in getting in the hay-harvest, for which purpose they are allowed twenty days every summer.

It may be interesting to offer a few remarks with respect to the unfortunate exiles and prisoners who are doomed to work at the mines and manufactories of Siberia.

The annual average of the new convicts is about six thousand, or about a hundred males and twenty females weekly, who pass through Ekaterinburg, the former every Tuesday, and the latter every Friday morning, into the more distant parts of Siberia. The rate of their

Digitized by Google

progress is from fifteen to twenty miles a day, excepting on Sundays and other great holidays. Houses are built at every station for their reception.

Their fatigues and sufferings, on so immense a journey, must, it may be conceived, be very great; if, however, they become foot-sore, or really ill, the peasants are compelled to forward them in telegas; and occasionally, when dangerously ill, they are left behind on the road, and not unfrequently relieved, by the friendly hand of death, from future misery. The females who survive the journey are generally so far broken down by its hardships or disease, as to be incapable afterward of bearing children; and thus the intentions of government, of adding to the future population of the country, are frustrated by the want of some better arrangements for the transferring these poor wretches to the scene of their banishment. The wives and families of the convicts are permitted to accompany them, if they wish it.

In the summer time many of the male convicts elude the vigilance of their guards, and

Digitized by Google

escape into the woods, where they contrive to subsist for a time, either on the wild fruits which nature offers them, or by the plunder of the neighbouring peasants and villages. As winter approaches, cold and hunger invariably compel them to surrender themselves, when they are punished accordingly.

A few years since, sixteen of these runaway convicts collected together in the woods near Ekaterinburg, and committed extensive depredations on the town and neighbourhood. They not only plundered for provisions, but, Roman-like, carried away women, whom they compelled to live with them; a body of soldiers, however, at length dispersed them, and secured several of them.

A singular attempt at robbery took place about a year before my visit to this place. Three men, designing to plunder a miller's house, which was situated near his mill, at two or three miles distant from the main road, procured a carriage resembling a post equipage, under the disguise of which they took the opportunity of the miller being absent, to get admitted into his house. They

Digitized by Google

found the miller's wife and another woman only within; the former they immediately directed to take them to a certain room, where they supposed the miller kept his money. Instead, however, of obeying them, the poor woman fainted away through fright, during the bustle occasioned by which the other woman contrived to escape. The robbers now put the wife into a large chest, and proceeded to rifle the house. Before they had satisfied themselves, however, a number of workmen from the mill rushed in and secured them; the female who had made her escape having given the alarm. It is needless to add, that the rogues got knouted and sent to the mines. One of them proved to be a butcher, in good circumstances.

On the day previous to leaving Ekaterinburg, I had the honour of dining with the Senator General Simanoff and his amiable family, comprising his lady, two sons, and as many daughters. Madame is a very pious woman, but yet, as it ought to be, very cheerful and agreeable in her manners and conversation. The general himself is an accom-

Digitized by Google

plished gentleman, and, from his knowledge of mineralogy, well calculated for the business he is at present occupied with.

Madame Simanoff expressed great anxiety to contribute to the comfort of my ensuing journey; and although I assured her that every requisite provision had been made, would persist in contributing something. At length it occurred to me, that, as the heat of the weather would not permit my recently-cooked meat to keep more than a couple of days, an addition of some salted provision would be acceptable; when she appeared highly gratified in ordering a couple of tongues and some smoke-dried sausages to be sent to me. These I found very serviceable, and they lasted until my arrival at Irkoutsk.

Previous to setting off, I had my pavoshka put into good repair, and in particular two new wheels attached to it, which cost me only twenty roubles, and proved so good, that I afterwards travelled two thousand five hundred miles with them, without the least necessity for repair.

Digitized by Google

Ekaterinburg, founded by Peter the Great, and so named in honour of his empress, contains about twelve thousand inhabitants. Perhaps a duller town for a traveller cannot be found. Its more respectable population consists of government officers, attached to the mines and manufactories in its neighbourhood. It has a post from St. Petersburg only once in the week, which is seventeen days on the road, and which, of course, anticipates all the public news, so that little information, except of a private nature, can be gleaned from the traveller who makes it in his route. The town contains seven stone churches and a nunnery, besides some excellent stone houses, where the merchants principally reside: one of these, occupied by the senator, is almost worthy of being a royal residence. The streets are not paved, and consequently very dirty after rain; from the situation of the town, however, they soon become dry again, particularly in summer; so that the chief inconvenience is felt at the commencement and breaking up of winter.

On the evening of Saturday, August 9, I

Digitized by Google

took my leave of Ekaterinburg, and proceeded to the country residence of my friend Mr. M., where I rested for the night, and in the morning bade adieu to his amiable family, who showed the most gratifying interest in my future happiness and safety: in short, the sensibility they expressed on this occasion almost overpowered my feelings. Nothing, however, could divert me for a moment from the gratification I felt in prosecuting my journey, to which my imagination began to set no limit, otherwise than by completing the circuit of the whole globe.

In the evening, without any event of particular interest occurring, I arrived at the town of Camichlof, distant a hundred and one versts from Ekaterinburg. At three in the afternoon of the next day, we reached a station where no post-horses were to be met with, in consequence of a General, who was on his way from Tobolsk to St. Petersburg, having taken them all.

I not only found this station without horses, but without postmaster or blacksmith. There is indeed only one postmaster to every four

Digitized by Google

stations, between Ekaterinburg and Tobolsk; while from Tobolsk to Irkoutsk the number is still further diminished. This is a great inconvenience to those travellers whose rank does not give them authority to inflict corporal punishment on the negligent or insolent drivers; besides, where the postmaster is wanting, you generally find the want also of a Samavar, or other convenient vessel to boil your water in.

My occasion for a blacksmith was not very urgent; but on arriving at the next station, the town of Tumen, we were detained nearly an hour in repairs, notwithstanding I had left Ekaterinburg so lately, in what was considered a perfect state.

As I sat in my carriage during these operations, an unfortunate exile addressed me in French; and began to pour out his tale of woes. He informed me, that he had held a respectable situation in the service of this country, from which he had been removed into exile, without having the slightest knowledge of the nature of his offence. Of course I cannot vouch for the authenticity of his

Digitized by Google

story. I dropped a few words of condolence, and drove off.

Tumen is the first town in the government of Tobolsk, and about midway between that city and Ekaterinburg, being two hundred miles from each; it was also the first town built by the Russians in Siberia. The inhabitants are principally Roscolnicks, a numerous sect of dissenters from the Greek church. They will neither enter a Greek church, nor permit one of its priests to enter their houses; the consequence is, that they are obliged to fee the latter for abstaining from this exercise of their duty, and blessing their habitations on certain festivals, when they have a privilege of doing so; hence where there is an abundance of these dissenters in a parish, its pastor thrives better than in the midst of a pure flock of his own. These people are possessed of great industry, and are very regular and sober in their habits, and therefore, as relates to temporal affairs, are generally prosperous.

There are several large brandy distilleries in this neighbourhood, and the town itself is

Digitized by Google

of much consideration, being well situated for commerce on the river Tuma, in the midst of populous villages and a fertile country.

On leaving this place we crossed the Tuma, and proceeded to the next station, through a hilly country and along indifferent roads.

On the 12th, about one o'clock in the day, we crossed the river Tobol, and soon after arrived at a station distant a hundred and seventy versts from the city of Tobolsk. The postmaster here was particularly civil and attentive, the accommodations of his house being superior to what are generally met with in this part of the world.

The roads were now very rough and hilly. At eight in the evening we arrived within three stations from Tobolsk, at a Tartar village, where there was much difficulty in procuring boiling water. The postmaster and his wife were both absent, and their daughter, a girl of fifteen, unable to furnish me with any thing except a few berries. My postillion set off into the village, amongst his Tartar brethren, and at length returned with water, which, however, he stated, he had procured

Digitized by Google

with great difficulty. I suspect that his laziness, or wish to make much of his services, were the principal sources of this difficulty.

After much detention, throughout the night, either at the post-houses, or in consequence of the badness of the roads, we at length arrived in the immediate neighbourhood of the celebrated capital of Siberia, the city of Tobolsk. When within half a mile of it we crossed the river Irtish, on a raft; on landing on the opposite bank, my passport was examined, after which we were allowed to proceed into the city.

END OF VOL. I.

Norman, Printer, 29, Maiden Lane, Covent Garden.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RETURN TO the circulation desk of any
University of California Library
or to the
NORTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
Bldg. 400, Richmond Field Station
University of California
Richmond, CA 94804-4698

ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS
2-month loans may be renewed by calling
(415) 642-6753
1-year loans may be recharged by bringing books
to NRLF
Renewals and recharges may be made 4 days
prior to due date

DUE AS STAMPED BELOW

DEC 0 2 1990

NOV 13 2001

OCT 02 2002
MAY 21 2003

MAR 30 2006

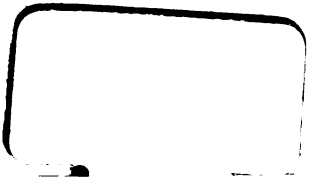
Digitized by Google

YC 76782

857839

DK25
H6
v.1

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google